# Modular Symmetries and the Flavour Problem 

## João Rafael Freitas Lourenço

Thesis to obtain the Master of Science Degree in Engineering Physics

Supervisor: Prof. Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas

## Examination Committee

Chairperson: Prof. Mário João Martins Pimenta Supervisor: Prof. Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas
Member of the Committee: Prof. Maria Margarida Nesbitt Rebelo da Silva

To my dear parents

## Acknowledgments

First of all, I would like to thank my supervisor, Prof. Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas, for all the support and guidance provided during the last year and our insightful discussions, and also for reviewing the present dissertation and his useful corrections.

Secondly, I would like to acknowledge the financial support provided by the CFTP through the IST-ID in the last year. Additionally, I would also like to remember the financial support provided by DGES in allowing me to continue my graduate studies.

Finally, I would like to thank my family and friends for their support in these last years, especially my dear parents to whom this work is dedicated.

## Resumo

Notamos que nenhuma solução é fornecida para o problema do sabor no contexto do Modelo Padrão (SM) mas que este pode ser resolvido pela introdução de múltiplas simetrias modulares. Construímos modelos para os sabores leptónicos baseados em duas simetrias modulares $A_{4}$, que são quebradas por um campo bi-tripleto para o subgrupo diagonal $A_{4}^{D}$, resultando em uma simetria modular do sabor efetiva com dois módulos. Utilizámos esses módulos como estabilizadores, que preservam simetrias residuais distintas, permitindo-nos obter a mistura Tri-Maximal $2\left(\mathrm{TM}_{2}\right)$ com um conteúdo de campos mínimo, sem flavons a baixa energia, abaixo da quebra para um único $A_{4}$. Também construímos modelos baseados em duas simetrias modulares $A_{5}$, que são quebradas por um bi-quintupleto (se os neutrinos obtêm a sua massa através do operador de Weinberg) ou um campo bi-tripleto (se os neutrinos obtêm a sua massa através do tipo I do mecanismo de seesaw), para o subgrupo diagonal $A_{5}^{D}$. Para estes modelos, obtém-se uma mistura que preserva a segunda coluna da mistura do número de ouro (GR), que denominamos $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$. Os melhores ajustes e gráficos para o decaimento beta sem neutrinos são obtidos para todos estes modelos. Percebeu-se que a ordenação normal (NO) das massas dos neutrinos é a ordenação mais favorecida, sendo os modelos que resultam em GR $_{2}$ mais favoráveis do que aqueles que resultam em $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$. Para todos os ajustes para NO, as massas e ângulos de mistura dos neutrinos, exceto $\theta_{12}$, são compatíveis com os resultados experimentais a $1 \sigma$.

Palavras-chave: Problema do Sabor, Múltiplas Simetrias Modulares, Mistura Tti-Maximal 2, Mistura do Número de Ouro, Massas e Ângulos de Mistura dos Neutrinos


#### Abstract

We note that no solution is provided for the flavour problem in the context of the Standard Model (SM) but that this can be solved by introducing multiple modular symmetries. We construct lepton flavour models based on two $A_{4}$ modular symmetries, which are broken by a bi-triplet field to the diagonal subgroup $A_{4}^{D}$, resulting in an effective modular flavour symmetry with two moduli. We employ these moduli as stabilisers, that preserve distinct residual symmetries, enabling us to obtain Tri-Maximal 2 ( $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ ) mixing with a minimal field content, flavonless at the effective scale, below the breaking to the single $A_{4}$. We also construct models based on two $A_{5}$ modular symmetries, which are broken by a bi-quintuplet (if neutrinos get their mass through the Weinberg operator) or a bi-triplet field (if neutrinos get their mass through the type I seesaw mechanism), to the diagonal subgroup $A_{5}^{D}$. For these models, a mixing that preserves the second column of the Golden Ratio (GR) mixing, which we called $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$, is obtained. Best fit points and plots for the neutrinoless beta decay are obtained for all these models. It was realised that the normal ordering ( NO ) of neutrino masses is the preferred ordering, being the models that lead to $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ more favourable than those that lead to $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$. For all the best fit values for NO , the neutrino masses and mixing angles except $\theta_{12}$ are compatible with experimental results at the $1 \sigma$ confidence interval.


Keywords: Flavour Problem, Multiple Modular Symmetries, Tri-Maximal 2 Mixing, Golden Ratio Mixing, Neutrino Masses and Mixing Angles

## Contents

Acknowledgments ..... v
Resumo ..... vii
Abstract ..... ix
List of Tables ..... xiii
List of Figures ..... xv
Nomenclature ..... xvii
Glossary ..... xix
1 Introduction ..... 1
2 State of the Art ..... 3
2.1 The leptonic sector of the SM ..... 4
2.2 How do neutrinos get their mass? ..... 5
2.2.1 Weinberg operator ..... 5
2.2.2 See-saw mechanism ..... 6
2.3 Lepton mixing ..... 7
2.4 The flavour problem ..... 8
2.5 Modular symmetries - an introduction ..... 9
2.5.1 Modular group and modular forms ..... 9
2.5.2 Models with a single modular symmetry ..... 10
2.5.3 Models with multiple modular symmetries ..... 11
3 Two $A_{4}$ Modular Symmetries for Tri-Maximal 2 Mixing ..... 13
3.1 Modular $A_{4}$ symmetry and residual symmetries ..... 13
3.1.1 Modular $A_{4}$ symmetry and modular forms of level 3 ..... 14
3.1.2 Stabilisers and residual symmetries of modular $A_{4}$ ..... 15
3.2 Tri-bimaximal mixing and related mixings ..... 18
3.3 Models with two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries - using the Weinberg operator ..... 19
3.4 Models with two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries - using the see-saw mechanism ..... 24
3.4.1 $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu} \rightarrow A_{4}^{D}$ breaking ..... 25
3.4.2 Model 1 ..... 25
3.4.3 Model 2 ..... 31
4 Two $A_{5}$ Modular Symmetries for Golden Ratio 2 Mixing ..... 37
4.1 Modular $A_{5}$ symmetry and residual symmetries ..... 37
4.1.1 Modular $A_{5}$ symmetry and modular forms of level 5 ..... 37
4.1.2 Stabilisers and residual symmetries of modular $A_{5}$ ..... 39
4.2 Golden ratio mixing and related mixings ..... 40
4.3 Models with two modular $A_{5}$ symmetries - using the Weinberg operator ..... 43
4.4 Models with two modular $A_{5}$ symmetries - using the see-saw mechanism ..... 50
5 Conclusions ..... 57
Bibliography ..... 59
A Modular $A_{4}$ Symmetry Group ..... 65
A. $1 A_{4}$ multiplication rules ..... 65
A. 2 Modular forms of weight 2 for $A_{4}$ ..... 66
A. 3 Vacuum alignments for bi-triplet $\Phi$ in $A_{4}$ ..... 67
B Modular $A_{5}$ Symmetry Group ..... 71
B. $1 A_{5}$ multiplication rules ..... 71
B. 2 Modular forms of weight 2 for $A_{5}$ ..... 76
B. 3 Vacuum alignments for bi-quintuplet $\Phi$ in $A_{5}$ ..... 77
B. 4 Vacuum alignments for bi-triplet $\Phi$ in $A_{5}$ ..... 78

## List of Tables

3.1 Stabilisers for the $A_{4}$ elements [62]. ..... 16
3.2 Directions for the modular forms of weight 2, 4, 6 and 8 of level 3 for four $A_{4}$ elements ( Y in Table 3.3). ..... 17
3.3 Singlets for the modular forms of weight 4,6 and 8 of level 3 for four $A_{4}$ elements and factors $Y$ for each stabiliser. ..... 17
3.4 Transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 20
3.5 Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 23
3.6 Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 26
3.7 Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 29
3.8 Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 31
3.9 Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. ..... 34
4.1 Stabilisers for some of the $A_{5}$ elements [62]. ..... 40
4.2 Directions for the modular forms of weight 2 and 4 of level 5 for the $A_{5}$ generators. ..... 41
4.3 Transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$. ..... 44
4.4 Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$. ..... 49
4.5 Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$. ..... 50
4.6 Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$. ..... 55
A. 1 Representation for the two generators of $A_{4}$, where $\omega=e^{i 2 \pi / 3}=-1 / 2+i \sqrt{3} / 2$. ..... 65
A. 2 Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the bitriplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{4}$67
B. 1 Representation for the two generators of $A_{5}$, where $\phi=\frac{1+\sqrt{5}}{2}$ and $\zeta=e^{2 \pi i / 5}$. ..... 72
B. 2 Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the bi- quintuplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{5}$ ..... 77
B. 3 Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the bi- triplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{5}$. ..... 79

## List of Figures

3.1 Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (dark-red, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures there were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen $m_{\beta \beta}<61-165 \mathrm{meV}$ [64] and cosmological constraints from PLANCK 2018 (disfavoured region $0.12 \mathrm{eV}<\sum m_{i}<0.60 \mathrm{eV}$ and very disfavoured region $\sum m_{i}>0.60 \mathrm{eV}$ ) [65].24
3.2 Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (dark-red, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1. ..... 30
3.3 Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (dark-red, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1. ..... 34
4.1 Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$. For NO, the points having $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ were plotted in dark-red. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1. ..... 49
4.2 Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$. For NO, the points with $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ were plotted in dark-red. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1. ..... 56

# Nomenclature 

## Superscripts

$\dagger \quad$ Hermitian conjugate.

* Adjoint.

T Transpose.

## Glossary

$\mathbf{G R}_{2} \quad$ Mixing that preserves the second column of the GR mixing.
GR Golden Ratio mixing.
IO Inverted Ordering of neutrino masses.
NO Normal Ordering of neutrino masses.
SM Standard Model.
TBM Tri-bimaximal mixing.
$\mathbf{T M}_{2}$ Trimaximal 2 mixing, preserving the second column of the TBM mixing.
VEV Vacuum Expectation Value.
h.c. Helicity Conjugate.

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

The current model of particle physics is the Standard Model (SM) [1-3]. Until now, it has been extremely compatible with experimental results. In this model, the fundamental constituents of matter are quarks and leptons. There are three charged electron-like leptons, the electron, the muon, and the tau, and three neutral leptons interacting only weakly, the neutrinos, which come in three flavours as their charged partners. These are organised in triplets of flavour. The SM also describes the interactions between these particles, which are mediated by bosons: the photon, for the electromagnetic interaction, the $W$ and $Z$ bosons for the weak interaction, and the gluons, for the strong interaction.

This model was completed with the discovery of the Higgs boson in 2012 at the LHC [4, 5]. After spontaneous symmetry breaking, when the Higgs field acquires a non zero vacuum expectation value (VEV), the Yukawa terms give mass to the charged leptons. However, neutrinos remain massless in the SM, which is in disagreement with experimental evidence.

Flavour symmetries, both discrete and continuous, have been extensively treated in the literature as a way to solve the puzzling questions associated with flavour. Examples of discrete well-known symmetries applied to flavour are $A_{4}, S_{4}, A_{5}$ and $\Delta(27)$.

Theories that use modular symmetries, upgrading the Yukawa couplings to modular forms and introducing similar transformations for the particle blocks, were also constructed. Models using multiple $S_{4}$ modular symmetries (one for the charged leptons, one or two for the neutrinos, each one with its own modulus field, that treat the symmetry breaking from these multiple symmetry groups to a single symmetry group at low energy) can be found at [6, 7]

Before the mixing angles were observed experimentally with more precision, a commonly used mixing texture for the PMNS matrix was the Tri-BiMaximal mixing (TBM). This ansatz, ruled out since the measurement of non-zero $\theta_{13}$ mixing angle, remains an appealing leading order solution with no free parameters. Mixing schemes such as Tri-Maximal $1\left(\mathrm{TM}_{1}\right)$ and Tri-Maximal $2\left(\mathrm{TM}_{2}\right)$ preserve respectively the first and second columns of tri-bimaximal mixing [8], and remain viable. For models that deal with $A_{4}$ symmetries I will be particularly interested in the tri-maximal $2\left(\mathrm{TM}_{2}\right)$ mixing, which preserves
the second column of the tri-bimaximal mixing matrix:

$$
U_{T M_{2}}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
- & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & -  \tag{1.1}\\
- & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & - \\
- & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & -
\end{array}\right)
$$

Another mixing I will be particularly interested, in this case with relation to models with $A_{5}$, is the Golden Ratio mixing. More specifically, I will be exclusively interested in models that preserve the second column of the golden ratio mixing matrix:

$$
U_{G R_{2}}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
- & \frac{1}{\sqrt{2+\phi}} & -  \tag{1.2}\\
- & \frac{\phi}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & - \\
- & \frac{\phi}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & -
\end{array}\right),
$$

where $\phi$ is the golden ratio: $\phi=\frac{1+\sqrt{5}}{2}$.
The objective of this dissertation now follows: I will use multiple modular symmetries, either two $A_{4}$ 's or two $A_{5}$ 's, to construct a high energy theory which is then broken to a low energy model with a single modular symmetry, whose moduli fields gain different VEV's, leading to the realisation of different mass textures in the charged lepton and neutrino sectors. It is then possible to obtain a realistic mixing matrix and mass hierarchies, for example $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ or $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$. These modular symmetries are thus able to generate all masses and mixing parameters for the leptons, using a much smaller set of free parameters, almost only using the VEV's of the Higgs and the moduli fields. Additionally, it will be investigated, through the introduction of driving fields, how the VEV's of the fields that are responsible for the breaking from two modular symmetries to a single one are created.

We will now conclude with a brief outline of the present thesis. In Chapter 2, we review the state of the art of the field. We start by reviewing the leptonic sector of the SM model, how neutrino masses can be generated and discuss how the flavour problem arises. We then introduce the concept of modular symmetries, which can be used to solve the flavour problem, and how we can obtain a lagrangian invariant under these symmetries. In Chapter 3, three models using two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries are introduced which are then broken to a single $A_{4}$, one using the Weinberg operator and two the type I seesaw mechanism. In Chapter 4, the same procedure is introduced for obtaining two models, one using the Weinberg operator, the other the seesaw mechanism, invariant under two $A_{5}$ modular symmetries which are similarly broken to a single $A_{5}$. In Chapter 5 , we review the main conclusions and some aspects of the present work possible to be improved in the future.

## Chapter 2

## State of the Art

The present state of theoretical particle physics had their main development in the 30's and 40's with the development of Quantum Field Theory (QFT) in the form of Quantum Electrodynamics (QED). In connection with experiment, this framework lead to the establishment of the SM [3, 9, 10]. However, there were still some problems that remained unsolved and lead to the investigation of extensions of this model.

Supersymmetry first appeared in the context of string theory through the introduction of infinitesimal transformations that interchange bosonic and fermionic fields [11, 12] but soon was worked into a form using quantum field theory in four spacetime dimensions [13] (see [14, 15] and their bibliography for the subsequent development). Given the present experimental knowledge, there is no support for this class of models, that are today quite disfavoured in the sense of requiring the superpartners of the known particles to be much heavier. But it was in connection with supersymmetry and string theory that a new type of symmetries started to be applied to extended forms of the SM: modular symmetries. These, similarly to simpler symmetries already used, proved to be a way of generating all the parameters in the leptonic sector of the SM in agreement with experiment

Flavour symmetries, both discrete and continuous, have been extensively employed in the literature as a way to solve the puzzling questions associated with flavour. Examples of well-known discrete symmetries applied to flavour are $S_{3}, A_{4}, S_{4}$ and $A_{5}$. More recently, these same symmetries are used in flavour models as modular symmetries $\Gamma_{2} \simeq S_{3}$ [16-20], $\Gamma_{3} \simeq A_{4}$ [21-44], $\Gamma_{4} \simeq S_{4}$ [6, 7, 45-51], and $\Gamma_{5} \simeq A_{5}$ [52, 53]. More recently $\Gamma_{7} \simeq \operatorname{PSL}\left(2, \mathbb{Z}_{7}\right)$ was studied [54] and [55] studied the mass sum rules arising in these models.

As an example, a $S_{4}$ flavour model featuring $\mathrm{TM}_{1}$ mixing [56] is constructed in an elegant manner from three $S_{4}$ modular symmetries [7]. This work presents a general mechanism of employing multiple modular symmetries to construct a high energy theory which is then broken to a low energy model with a single modular symmetry, which is also broken when these modulus fields gain different VEV's at fixed points of the modular symmetry (stabilisers). The preserved residual symmetries then lead to the realisation of different mass textures in the charged lepton and neutrino sectors. These modular symmetries are thus able to generate all masses and mixing parameters for the leptons, using a much
smaller set of free parameters than the present SM. In [6], a similar model that uses only two $S_{4}$ modular symmetries is presented.

In the following overview of the topic, I will start by reviewing the leptonic sector of the SM (Section 2.1). After that, some ways of generating neutrino masses will be introduced (Section 2.2), followed by a brief section on lepton mixing (Section 2.3). Some interesting questions that remain unsolved, the so called flavour problem, which is the primary motivation for the present work, are succinctly explained in Section 2.4. It will be introduced afterwards one way of recreating realistic masses and mixing parameters: the addition of modular flavour symmetries (Section 2.5). These are the foundations of the following chapters and their models. For part of this chapter, [57] will be followed.

### 2.1 The leptonic sector of the SM

In the SM, the strong, weak and electromagnetic interactions are mediated by spin-1 particles that are connected to the local gauge symmetries $S U(3)_{C} \times S U(2)_{L} \times U(1)_{Y}$, where $C$ stands for colour, $L$ for left-handedness, and $Y$ for hypercharge. This symmetry is spontaneously broken to $S U(3)_{C} \times U(1)_{E M}$ where $U(1)_{E M}$ couples to the electromagnetic charge $Q_{E M}=T_{3}+Y$ where $T_{3}$ is the third component of the isospin.

In the leptonic sector, one has three generations of charged leptons, that can be both left and righthanded fermions, and three left-handed neutrinos. The left-handed particles are arranged in doublets of $S U(2)_{L}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{L l}=\binom{\nu_{l}}{l}_{L} \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the other three charged leptons are singlets of $S U(2)_{L}$. In the SM model, no right-handed neutrinos are considered because neutrinos do not interact through other force than the weak force and the weak bosons only couple to left-handed particles. Left-handed neutrinos are also known as active neutrinos and right-handed neutrinos are know as sterile neutrinos, since they have no SM interactions.

The only possible interaction terms when imposing $S U(2)_{L}$ invariance for the charged currents (CC) among neutrinos and their associated charged leptons and the neutral currents (NC) among neutrinos are

$$
\begin{align*}
-\mathcal{L}_{C C} & =\frac{g}{\sqrt{2}} \sum_{l} \bar{\nu}_{L l} \gamma^{\mu} l_{L} W_{\mu}^{+}+h . c .  \tag{2.2}\\
-\mathcal{L}_{N C} & =\frac{g}{2 \cos \theta_{W}} \sum_{l} \bar{\nu}_{L l} \gamma^{\mu} \nu_{L l} Z_{\mu}^{0} \tag{2.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where $g$ is the weak coupling constant and $\theta_{W}$ the Weinberg angle.
In the SM the fermions get their mass through a Yukawa term that couples the scalar Higgs field doublet $\phi$ to a component of a $S U(2)_{L}$ doublet and a $S U(2)_{L}$ singlet through a Yukawa coupling $Y$. For
leptons, this term has the following form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{Y \text { ukawa,leptonic }}=Y_{i j}^{l} \bar{L}_{L i} \phi E_{R j}+\text { h.c.. } \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

After spontaneous symmetry breaking, when the Higgs acquires the VEV $\langle\phi\rangle=1 / \sqrt{2}(0, v+h(x))$, the charged lepton masses are generated:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{Y u k a w a, l e p t o n i c}=\bar{l}_{L i} m_{i j}^{l} E_{R j}+h . c ., \quad m_{i j}^{l}=Y_{i j}^{l} \frac{v}{\sqrt{2}} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The model only contains left-handed neutrinos thus no Yukawa mass terms can be constructed for the neutrinos and these remain massless at the Lagrangian level.

A possible neutrino mass would arise from the bilinear $\bar{L}_{L} L_{L}^{c}$ where $L_{L}^{c}=C \bar{L}^{T}$ is the charged conjugated field, $C$ the charge conjugation matrix representing a charge conjugation operator. However, this term is forbidden in the SM because it violates the total leptonic number by two units thus cannot be induced by loop corrections, and also violates $B-L$ thus cannot be induced by non-perturbative corrections.

But it is a well established result that neutrinos oscillate between flavours. The first clue arose from the discrepancy between theoretical models for the neutrinos produced at the Sun and the experimental results of neutrino rates. This result was explained by the conversion of electron neutrinos into muon and tau neutrinos due to a non-zero probability of measuring muon and tau neutrinos as a initial beam of electron neutrinos propagates through space. This implies that neutrinos have different masses, so at least two of them, although very light, have a mass, which is in disagreement with the SM. Hence the need to go beyond the SM.

### 2.2 How do neutrinos get their mass?

We consider in this section how terms can be added to the SM to describe the neutrino masses.

### 2.2.1 Weinberg operator

One possible way of seeing the neutrino masses problem is to consider that new physics only appears above a scale $\Lambda_{N P}$ and that the SM is simply a effective low energy theory of a high energy theory. In this case, one doesn't have to worry about the renormalisability of the theory and terms with mass dimension larger than 4, although suppressed by $1 / \Lambda_{N P}^{\operatorname{dim}-4}$, are not forbidden. The least suppressed term is the dimension 5 term:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{Z_{i j}^{\nu}}{\Lambda_{N P}}\left(\bar{L}_{L i} \tilde{\phi}\right)\left(\tilde{\phi}^{T} L_{L j}^{C}\right)+\text { h.c. } \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{\phi}=i \tau_{2} \phi^{*}$. It gives rise, after spontaneous symmetry breaking, to the mass terms

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{\nu}}=\frac{Z_{i j}^{\nu}}{2} \frac{v^{2}}{\Lambda_{N P}} \bar{\nu}_{L i} \nu_{L j}^{c}+\text { h.c. } \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a Majorana mass term. The suppression points towards the lightness of the known neutrinos. In fact, this model can be interpreted as the low energy limit of the see-saw model discussed in the following section, where $m$ heavy sterile neutrinos are added. In this model, the new physics scale $\Lambda_{N P}$ is simply the mass scale of the heavy sterile neutrinos.

### 2.2.2 See-saw mechanism

Other possibility is to consider now the SM with the addition of $m$ sterile neutrinos. Two possible gauge invariant terms can be constructed:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{\nu}}=M_{D i j} \bar{\nu}_{s i} \nu_{L j}+\frac{1}{2} M_{N i j} \bar{\nu}_{s i} \nu_{s j}^{c}+h . c . \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{D}$ is a complex $m \times 3$ matrix, $M_{N}$ a symmetric $m \times m$ matrix and $\nu^{c}=C \bar{\nu}^{T}$ is the charged conjugated neutrino field. The first term arises from the Yukawa terms for the neutrinos after spontaneous symmetry breaking, while the second term is a Majorana term that violates leptonic number. This can be rewritten as

$$
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{\nu}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\bar{\nu}_{L}^{c} & \bar{\nu}_{s}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & M_{D}^{T}  \tag{2.9}\\
M_{D} & M_{N}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\nu_{L}}{\nu_{s}^{c}}+h . c . \equiv \overline{\bar{\nu}}^{c} M_{\nu} \vec{\nu}+h . c . .
$$

Given that $M_{\nu}$ is a $(3+m) \times(3+m)$ symmetric complex matrix, it is possible to diagonalize it by a unitary $V^{\nu}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(V^{\nu}\right)^{T} M_{\nu} V^{\nu}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{1}, m_{2}, \ldots, m_{3+m}\right) \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

This induces a change of basis, from the interaction eigenstates to the mass eigenstates:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nu_{\text {mass }}=\left(V^{\nu}\right)^{\dagger} \vec{\nu} \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

In terms of mass eigenstates, Eq.(2.9) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{\nu}}=\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^{3+m} m_{k}\left(\bar{\nu}_{\text {mass }, k}^{c} \nu_{m a s s, k}+\bar{\nu}_{\text {mass }, k} \nu_{\text {mass }, k}^{c}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^{3+m} m_{k} \bar{\nu}_{M k} \nu_{M k} \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\nu_{M k}=\nu_{\text {mass }, k}+\nu_{\text {mass }, k}^{c}=\left(V^{\nu \dagger} \vec{\nu}\right)_{k}+\left(V^{\nu \dagger} \vec{\nu}\right)_{k}^{c}$. The $\nu_{M}$ states obey $\nu_{M}=\nu_{M}^{c}$, thus they are Majorana states. This means that one field is enough to describe both neutrino and antineutrino states. While the Dirac fermions have four-component spinor representations where all components are independent, the four-component Majorana spinors can be written in terms of a two-component Weyl spinor. For more details on Dirac, Majorana and Weyl fermions, see e.g. [58]. When working with Dirac neutrinos instead, one has simply to set $M_{N}=0$ in Eq.(2.9).

It is possible to get 3 light neutrinos $\nu_{l}$ and $m$ heavy neutrinos $N$ from the previous $3+m$ neutrinos if the mass eigenvalues of $M_{N}$ are much larger than the electroweak symmetry breaking scale $v$. This can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{\nu}}=\frac{1}{2} \bar{\nu}_{l} M^{l} \nu_{l}+\frac{1}{2} \bar{N} M^{h} N \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gather*}
M^{l} \simeq-V_{l}^{T} M_{D}^{T} M_{N}^{-1} M_{D} V_{l}  \tag{2.14}\\
M^{h} \simeq V_{h}^{T} M_{N} V_{h}  \tag{2.15}\\
V^{\nu} \simeq\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\left(1-\frac{1}{2} M_{D}^{\dagger} M_{N}^{*-1} M_{N}^{-1} M_{D}\right) V_{l} & M_{D}^{\dagger} M_{N}^{*-1} V_{h} \\
-M_{N}^{-1} M_{D} V_{l} & \left(1-\frac{1}{2} M_{N}^{-1} M_{D} M_{D}^{\dagger} M_{N}^{*-1}\right) V_{h}
\end{array}\right) \tag{2.16}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $V_{l}$ and $V_{h}$ are respectively $3 \times 3$ and $m \times m$ unitary matrices, $M^{l}$ is the mass matrix for light neutrinos, $M^{h}$ the mass matrix for heavy neutrinos and $V^{\nu}$ the matrix in Eq.(2.10).

As wanted, the masses of the heavier states are proportional to $M_{N}$ and the lighter states to $M_{D}^{2} M_{N}^{-1}$. When the heavy neutrino masses increase, the almost massless neutrinos become lighter, hence the name see-saw mechanism applied to this model.

### 2.3 Lepton mixing

Previously we proceeded to the diagonalization of the neutrino mass matrix (see Eqs.(2.10)-(2.11)). To work only with mass eigenstates, the mass matrix for the charged leptons needs to be diagonalized too.

In the interaction basis, the mass terms for the charged leptons that arise from the Yukawa terms are

$$
-\mathcal{L}_{M_{l}}=\left(\bar{e}_{L}^{I} \bar{\mu}_{L}^{I} \bar{\tau}_{L}^{I}\right) M_{l}\left(\begin{array}{c}
\bar{e}_{R}^{I}  \tag{2.17}\\
\bar{\mu}_{R}^{I} \\
\bar{\tau}_{R}^{I}
\end{array}\right)+h . c .
$$

It is possible to diagonalize $M_{l}$ using two $3 \times 3$ unitary matrices $V_{L}^{l}$ and $V_{R}^{l}$ obtaining

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{L}^{l} M_{l} V_{R}^{l}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{e}, m_{\mu}, m_{\tau}\right) \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that the mass eigenstates can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{L}=V_{L}^{l \dagger} l_{L}^{I} \quad \text { and } l_{R}=V_{R}^{l \dagger} l_{R}^{I} \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

This change from the interaction eigenstates to the mass eigenstates has consequences in the charged current part of the Lagrangian (Eq.(2.2)), that is now

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\mathcal{L}_{C C}=\frac{g}{\sqrt{2}} \sum_{l} \bar{l}_{L} \gamma^{\mu} U \nu_{\text {mass }} W_{\mu}^{-}+h . c . \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the $3 \times(3+m)$ mixing matrix $U$ was introduced. It is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
U=V_{L}^{l \dagger} V^{\nu} \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where in this product only the first three rows of $V^{\nu}$ are considered.
Consider now the parametrization of this mixing matrix. Since the charged leptons are Dirac particles, three phases can be eliminated by field redefinitions. The same occurs for neutrinos if they are Dirac particles: 3+m phases can be eliminated. However, this is not possible if neutrinos are Majorana particles, in which case only one phase can be eliminated.

If there were only 3 Majorana neutrinos, the situation would be similar to what happens in the quark sector, where the mixing is described by the Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa (CKM) matrix. In the leptonic sector, the mixing matrix is the Pontecorvo-Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata (PMNS) matrix. The parametrization is then

$$
U_{P M N S}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{2.22}\\
0 & c_{23} & s_{23} \\
0 & -s_{23} & c_{23}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
c_{13} & 0 & s_{13} e^{-i \delta_{C P}} \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
-s_{13} e^{i \delta_{C P}} & 0 & c_{13}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
c_{12} & s_{12} & 0 \\
-s_{12} & c_{12} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
e^{i \eta_{1}} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & e^{i \eta_{2}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $c_{i j} \equiv \cos \theta_{i j}$ and $s_{i j} \equiv \sin \theta_{i j}$. Without loss of generality, one can take the angles $\theta_{i j} \in[0, \pi / 2]$ and the phases $\delta_{C P}, \eta_{i} \in[0,2 \pi]$. The parametrization for the PMNS matrix above has more two phases than the CKM matrix, due to the Majorana nature of the neutrinos. If neutrinos are Dirac particles, the number of phases is only one, as in the CKM matrix, and $\eta_{i}$ can be eliminated.

Although the unitarity condition is not valid for the 3 light neutrinos mixing sub-matrix for a number of neutrinos larger than 3 (we are only interested in this sub-matrix, not the complete mixing matrix), this violation of unitarity is small and the same parametrization can be used in models using the see-saw mechanism.

### 2.4 The flavour problem

However, even if we are able to modify slightly the SM to account for neutrino masses, we will still have a lot of questions on flavour that remain unanswered. First of all, there is no reason for why there are three families of quarks and leptons.

The mass hierarchies of the quarks and leptons also seem to encode new physics, with the down type quarks and charged leptons having mass values of the same order of magnitude, while the up-type quarks are much more hierarchical and the neutrinos are almost massless. But it is not only when we compare mass hierarchies that flavour for leptons and quarks has a very different behaviour.

The most recent values for the leptonic sector mixing matrix, obtained from the global fit NuFit [59] (other global fits for neutrino oscillation data are also available in the literature, e.g. [60]), is

$$
V_{P M N S}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
0.801 \rightarrow 0.845 & 0.513 \rightarrow 0.579 & 0.143 \rightarrow 0.156  \tag{2.23}\\
0.233 \rightarrow 0.507 & 0.461 \rightarrow 0.694 & 0.631 \rightarrow 0.778 \\
0.261 \rightarrow 0.526 & 0.471 \rightarrow 0.701 & 0.611 \rightarrow 0.761
\end{array}\right)
$$

and the quark sector mixing matrix is [57]

$$
V_{C K M}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0.97401 \pm 0.00011 & 0.22650 \pm 0.00048 & 0.00361_{-0.00009}^{+0.00011}  \tag{2.24}\\
0.22636 \pm 0.00048 & 0.97320 \pm 0.00011 & 0.04053_{-0.00061}^{+0.00083} \\
0.00854_{-0.00016}^{+0.00023} & 0.03978_{-0.00060}^{+0.00082} & 0.999172_{-0.000035}^{+0.000024}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The differences are clear: the mixing between flavours is much larger in the leptonic sector while the CKM matrix is almost diagonal. In fact, the PMNS mixing angles are much larger than the CKM mixing angles apart from two of them that have the same order of magnitude.

Finally, the SM and slight modifications of it have another conceptual problem: why are there much more parameters in the flavour sector than in the gauge (strong, weak and electromagnetic) sectors?

All these questions, that constitute the so called flavour problem, point towards the need for the introduction of a fundamental flavour symmetry that accounts for this large collection of parameters arising from the Higgs sector. This new symmetry could, from only a few parameters, generate all the fermion masses and mixing parameters.

### 2.5 Modular symmetries - an introduction

This section provides the general definitions of the modular group and modular forms, and some fundamental aspects of constructing a realistic model with multiple modular symmetries, as in [7]. In the following chapters the modular groups $\Gamma_{3}$ and $\Gamma_{5}$ will be particularly covered and models that obey the general requirements that are here introduced will be constructed.

### 2.5.1 Modular group and modular forms

The modular group $\bar{\Gamma}$ is the group of linear fractional transformations $\gamma$ that act on the complex modulus $\tau$, for $\tau$ in the upper-half complex plane, i.e. $\operatorname{Im}(\tau)>0$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma: \tau \rightarrow \gamma \tau=\frac{a \tau+b}{c \tau+d} \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a, b, c, d$ are integers and satisfy $a d-b c=1$.
It is convenient to use $2 \times 2$ matrices to represent the elements of $\bar{\Gamma}$ as

$$
\bar{\Gamma}=\left\{\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b  \tag{2.26}\\
c & d
\end{array}\right) /\{ \pm 1\}, a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{Z}, a d-b c=1\right\} .
$$

Note that, since $\gamma$ and $-\gamma$ are the same modular transformation, the group $\bar{\Gamma}$ is isomorphic to $\operatorname{PSL}(2, \mathbb{Z})=S L(2, \mathbb{Z}) / \mathbb{Z}_{2}$, where $S L(2, \mathbb{Z})$ is the group of $2 \times 2$ matrices with integer entries and determinant one.

The modular group has two generators, $S_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau}$, which satisfy $S_{\tau}^{2}=\left(S_{\tau} T_{\tau}\right)^{3}=1$. One possible
choice for these generators is the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\tau}: \tau \rightarrow-\frac{1}{\tau}, T_{\tau}: \tau \rightarrow \tau+1 \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and their corresponding representations are

$$
S_{\tau}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{2.28}\\
-1 & 0
\end{array}\right), T_{\tau}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

It is possible to define subgroups $\bar{\Gamma}(N)$ of $\bar{\Gamma}$ modding out the entries of the representation matrices:

$$
\bar{\Gamma}(N)=\left\{\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b  \tag{2.29}\\
c & d
\end{array}\right) \in \operatorname{PSL}(2, \mathbb{Z}),\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)(\bmod \mathrm{N})\right\}
$$

Although the groups $\bar{\Gamma}(N)$ are discrete but infinite, the quotient groups $\Gamma_{N}=\bar{\Gamma} / \bar{\Gamma}(N)$ are finite, thus being called finite modular groups. For $N \leq 5$, these groups are isomorphic to well-known groups: $\Gamma_{2} \simeq S_{3}, \Gamma_{3} \simeq A_{4}, \Gamma_{4} \simeq S_{4}, \Gamma_{5} \simeq A_{5}$. These finite modular groups can be obtained by imposing an additional condition, $T_{\tau}^{N}=1$, which implies that $\tau=\tau+N$.

Modular forms of weight $2 k$ and level $N$ are holomorphic functions of $\tau$ that transform under $\bar{\Gamma}(N)$ in the following way:

$$
f(\gamma \tau)=(c \tau+d)^{2 k} f(\tau), \gamma=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b  \tag{2.30}\\
c & d
\end{array}\right) \in \bar{\Gamma}(N)
$$

where $k$ is a non-negative integer and $N$ is natural (we are only interested in even weights). These modular forms are invariant under $\bar{\Gamma}(N)$, up to the factor $(c \tau+d)^{2 k}$, but they transform under the quotient group $\Gamma_{N}$.

Modular forms of weight $2 k$ and level $N$ span a linear space of finite dimension $\mathcal{M}_{2 k}(\bar{\Gamma}(N))$. It is possible to choose a basis in $\mathcal{M}_{2 k}(\bar{\Gamma}(N))$ such that the transformation of the modular forms under $\Gamma_{N}$ is described by a unitary representation $\rho$ of $\Gamma_{N}$ :

$$
f_{i}(\gamma \tau)=(c \tau+d)^{2 k} \rho(\gamma)_{i j} f_{j}(\tau), \gamma=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b  \tag{2.31}\\
c & d
\end{array}\right) \in \Gamma_{N}
$$

### 2.5.2 Models with a single modular symmetry

Considering an $\mathrm{N}=1$ supersymmetric model invariant under a finite modular symmetry, the action in general takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
S=\int d^{4} x d^{2} \theta d^{2} \bar{\theta} K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau, \bar{\tau}\right)+\left(\int d^{4} x d^{2} \theta W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau\right)+h . c .\right) \tag{2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Under $\Gamma_{N}$ the Kähler potential $K$ transforms at most by a Kähler transformation and the superpotential $W$ stays invariant:

$$
\begin{align*}
K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau, \bar{\tau}\right) & \rightarrow K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau, \bar{\tau}\right)+f\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau\right)+\bar{f}\left(\bar{\phi}_{i} ; \bar{\tau}\right)  \tag{2.33}\\
W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau\right) & \rightarrow W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau\right) \tag{2.34}
\end{align*}
$$

The superpotential is in general a function of the modulus $\tau$ and superfields $\phi_{i}$ and can be expanded as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau\right)=\sum_{n} \sum_{\left\{i_{1}, \ldots, i_{n}\right\}} \sum_{I_{Y}}\left(Y_{I_{Y}} \phi_{i_{1}} \ldots \phi_{i_{n}}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} . \tag{2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

We want the superpotential to be invariant under $\Gamma_{N}$. This is possible if we assume the couplings $Y_{I_{Y}}$ to be multiplet modular forms, and the superfields $\phi_{i}$ to transform as

$$
\begin{align*}
\phi_{i}(\tau) & \rightarrow \phi_{i}(\gamma \tau)=(c \tau+d)^{-2 k_{i}} \rho_{I_{i}}(\gamma) \phi_{i}(\tau)  \tag{2.36}\\
Y_{I_{Y}}(\tau) & \rightarrow Y_{I_{Y}}(\gamma \tau)=(c \tau+d)^{2 k_{Y}} \rho_{I_{Y}}(\gamma) Y_{I_{Y}}(\tau) \tag{2.37}
\end{align*}
$$

where $-2 k_{i}$ is the modular weight of $\phi_{i}, I_{i}$ is the representation of $\phi_{i}, 2 k_{Y}$ is the modular weight of $Y_{I_{Y}}, I_{Y}$ is the representation of $Y_{I_{Y}}$ and $\rho_{I_{i}}(\gamma)$ and $\rho_{I_{Y}}(\gamma)$ are the unitary representation matrices of $\gamma \in \Gamma_{N}$. For the superpotential to be invariant as wanted, the sum of the weights needs to equal zero, i.e. $k_{Y}=k_{i_{1}}+\ldots+k_{i_{n}}$, and the multiplication of the representations $I_{Y} \times I_{i_{1}} \times \ldots \times I_{i_{n}}$ has to contain an invariant singlet.

### 2.5.3 Models with multiple modular symmetries

Consider a theory that has multiple modular symmetries, based on a series of M modular groups $\bar{\Gamma}^{1}, \bar{\Gamma}^{2}, \ldots, \bar{\Gamma}^{M}$, where the modulus field for each symmetry $\bar{\Gamma}^{J}, J=1, \ldots, M$, is denoted as $\tau_{J}$. The associated modular transformations take the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{J}: \tau_{J} \rightarrow \gamma_{J} \tau_{J}=\frac{a_{J} \tau_{J}+b_{J}}{c_{J} \tau_{J}+d_{J}} \tag{2.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

A series of finite modular groups $\Gamma_{N_{J}}^{J}$ for $J=1, \ldots, M$ can be obtained by modding out an integer $N_{J}$ as done for only one modular group in the previous subsection and taking the quotient finite groups. Take into account that $N_{J}$ does not need to be identical to $N_{J^{\prime}}$ for $J \neq J^{\prime}$.

Consider an $\mathrm{N}=1$ supersymmetric model invariant under multiple modular symmetries; the action in general takes the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
S=\int d^{4} x d^{2} \theta d^{2} \bar{\theta} K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}, \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right)+\left(\int d^{4} x d^{2} \theta W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right)+\text { h.c. }\right) \tag{2.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Under $\Gamma_{N_{J}}^{J}$ for $J=1, \ldots, M$ the Kähler potential $K$ transforms at most by a Kähler transformation and the superpotential $W$ stays invariant:

$$
\begin{equation*}
K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}, \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right) \rightarrow K\left(\phi_{i}, \bar{\phi}_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}, \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right)+f\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right)+\bar{f}\left(\bar{\phi}_{i} ; \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right) \tag{2.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}, \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right) \rightarrow W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}, \bar{\tau}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{\tau}_{M}\right) . \tag{2.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

The superpotential is in general a function of the modulus $\tau_{i}$ and superfields $\phi_{i}$ and the expansion in powers of the superfields takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
W\left(\phi_{i} ; \tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right)=\sum_{n} \sum_{\left\{i_{1}, \ldots, i_{n}\right\}} \sum_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)}\left(Y_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)} \phi_{i_{1}} \ldots \phi_{i_{n}}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \tag{2.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the superpotential to be invariant under any finite modular transformation $\gamma_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{M}$ in $\Gamma_{N_{1}}^{1} \times \Gamma_{N_{2}}^{2} \times$ $\ldots \times \Gamma_{N_{M}}^{M}$, the couplings $Y_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)}$ must be multiplet modular forms, and the superfields $\phi_{i}$ must transform as

$$
\begin{align*}
\phi_{i}\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right) & \rightarrow \phi_{i}\left(\gamma_{1} \tau_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{M} \tau_{M}\right) \\
= & \prod_{J=1, \ldots, M}\left(c_{J} \tau_{J}+d_{J}\right)^{-2 k_{i, J}} \bigotimes_{J=1, \ldots, M} \rho_{I_{i, J}}\left(\gamma_{J}\right) \phi_{i}\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right)  \tag{2.43}\\
Y_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)}\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right) & \rightarrow Y_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)}\left(\gamma_{1} \tau_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{M} \tau_{M}\right) \\
= & \prod_{J=1, \ldots, M}\left(c_{J} \tau_{J}+d_{J}\right)^{2 k_{Y, J}} \bigotimes_{J=1, \ldots, M} \rho_{I_{Y, J}\left(\gamma_{J}\right) Y_{\left(I_{Y, 1}, \ldots, I_{Y, M}\right)}\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{M}\right) .} \tag{2.44}
\end{align*}
$$

where $-2 k_{i, J}$ is the modular weight of $\phi_{i}, I_{i, J}$ is the representation of $\phi_{i}, 2 k_{Y, J}$ is the modular weight of $Y_{I_{Y, J}}, I_{Y, J}$ is the representation of $Y_{I_{Y, J}}$ and $\rho_{I_{i, J}}(\gamma)$ and $\rho_{I_{Y, J}}(\gamma)$ are the unitary representation matrices of $\gamma_{J}$ with $\gamma_{J} \in \Gamma_{N_{J}}^{J}$. As discussed previously, for the superpotential to be invariant, $k_{Y, J}=k_{i_{1}, J}+\ldots+$ $k_{i_{n}, J}$, and $I_{Y, J} \times I_{i_{1}, J} \times \ldots \times I_{i_{n}, J}$ must contain an invariant singlet, for $J=1, \ldots, M$.

## Chapter 3

## Two $A_{4}$ Modular Symmetries for Tri-Maximal 2 Mixing

In this chapter, we will use two $A_{4}$ modular symmetries to build models that lead to the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, similarly to the use of multiple $S_{4}$ modular symmetries in [6, 7], where models that consider the symmetry breaking from multiple modular symmetry groups to a single symmetry group at low energy have been constructed in order to obtain the $\mathrm{TM}_{1}$ mixing. Although the current experimental evidence excludes TBM mixing, $\mathrm{TM}_{1}$ and $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ remain viable and appealing schemes for lepton mixings. Some of the work here included was already presented at [61].

We note that [25] already employs a single $A_{4}$ modular symmetry and two moduli in a model leading to $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, where neutrino masses arise through the effective Weinberg operator. In the models constructed here, we will also start by using the Weinberg operator and afterwards we will use the type I see-saw mechanism to generate the neutrino masses. The presence of two distinct moduli is justified by starting with two $A_{4}$ symmetries $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu}$ which are subsequently broken to the diagonal subgroup $A_{4}^{D}$. But before considering these matters more attentively, we should start by introducing the modular $A_{4}$ symmetry group.

### 3.1 Modular $A_{4}$ symmetry and residual symmetries

In the following subsection, some main properties of the modular $A_{4}$ symmetry group including the modular forms of level 3 and its stabilisers will be presented. These stabilisers apply for the specific case of $A_{4}$ modular symmetries and, as well as the stabilisers for the modular groups from $N=2$ to 5 , can be found in [62] (we note also that the stabilisers or fixed points for $N=3,4$ were presented in [63]). The directions at the stabilisers can also be found in [25], although the factors for the modular forms were corrected here.

### 3.1.1 Modular $A_{4}$ symmetry and modular forms of level 3

The group $A_{4}$ is the group of even permutations of 4 objects and has 12 elements. It is generated by two operators $S_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau}$ obeying

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\tau}^{2}=\left(S_{\tau} T_{\tau}\right)^{3}=T_{\tau}^{3}=1 \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This group has three singlets and one triplet as its irreducible representations and the multiplication rules and other properties can be found in Appendix A.1. In the so-called complex basis (basis where $T_{\tau}$ is diagonal), the triplet representations of the $A_{4}$ generators are

$$
\rho_{\mathbf{3}}\left(S_{\tau}\right)=\frac{1}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 2 & 2  \tag{3.2}\\
2 & -1 & 2 \\
2 & 2 & -1
\end{array}\right) \text { and } \rho_{\mathbf{3}}\left(T_{\tau}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \omega & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \omega^{2}
\end{array}\right) . \omega=e^{i 2 \pi / 3} .
$$

The flavour models that are going to be built employ $A_{4}$ as a modular symmetry group and the Yukawa couplings are hence going to be modular forms. These are now going to be introduced.

The three linearly independent weight 2 modular forms of level $3, Y_{3}^{(2)}=\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}, Y_{3}\right)$, form a triplet of $A_{4}$ and can be expressed in terms of the Dedekind eta functions (see Appendix A.2). The modular forms of higher weight can be generated starting from these modular forms of weight 2 . For example, the five linearly independent weight 4 modular forms decompose into a triplet 3 and two singlets 1 and $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$. Using the weight 2 modular forms, one obtains the weight 4 modular forms:

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(4)}=\frac{2}{3}\left(\begin{array}{l}
Y_{1}^{2}-Y_{2} Y_{3}  \tag{3.3}\\
Y_{3}^{2}-Y_{1} Y_{2} \\
Y_{2}^{2}-Y_{1} Y_{3}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{1}^{(4)}=Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{2} Y_{3}, \quad Y_{1^{\prime}}^{(4)}=Y_{3}^{2}+2 Y_{1} Y_{2} . \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The singlet $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ vanishes because $Y_{3}^{(2)}(\tau)$ satisfy the constraint

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{1^{\prime \prime}}^{(4)}=Y_{2}^{2}+2 Y_{1} Y_{3}=0 \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that here a factor $2 / 3$ was included in the definition for $Y_{3}^{(4)}$ in accordance with [25] although no such factor is present in [21].

Furthermore, the modular forms of weight 6, whose linear space has dimension 7 and decomposes into 2 triplets and 1 singlet, are [21]:

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}_{1}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{1}^{3}+2 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}  \tag{3.6}\\
Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2}+2 Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3} \\
Y_{1}^{2} Y_{3}+2 Y_{3}^{2} Y_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}_{2}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{3}^{3}+2 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}  \tag{3.7}\\
Y_{3}^{2} Y_{1}+2 Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2} \\
Y_{3}^{2} Y_{2}+2 Y_{2}^{2} Y_{1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{1}^{(6)}=Y_{1}^{3}+Y_{2}^{3}+Y_{3}^{3}-3 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}, \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the other triplet that we are able to construct vanishes:

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}_{3}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{2}^{3}+2 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}  \tag{3.9}\\
Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}+2 Y_{3}^{2} Y_{1} \\
Y_{2}^{2} Y_{1}+2 Y_{1}^{2} Y_{3}
\end{array}\right)=0
$$

The weight 8 modular forms, which were constructed similarly to the lower weight modular forms, will be useful for the second model that uses the see-saw mechanism. Their linear space has dimension 9 and decompose into three singlets, the first of which is invariant:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{(8)}=Y_{1}^{4}+4 Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2} Y_{3}+4 Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}^{2}  \tag{3.10}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}^{(8)}=2 Y_{1}^{3} Y_{2}+4 Y_{1} Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}+Y_{1}^{2} Y_{3}^{2}+2 Y_{2} Y_{3}^{3}  \tag{3.11}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}^{(8)}=Y_{3}^{4}+4 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}^{2}+4 Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2}^{2} \tag{3.12}
\end{align*}
$$

and two triplets:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{\mathbf{3}_{1}}^{(8)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{1}^{4}+Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2} Y_{3}-2 Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}^{2} \\
Y_{1}^{2} Y_{3}^{2}-Y_{1}^{3} Y_{2}-2 Y_{1} Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}+2 Y_{2} Y_{3}^{3} \\
Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2}^{2}-Y_{1}^{3} Y_{3}-2 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}^{2}+2 Y_{2}^{3} Y_{3}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{3.13}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{3}_{2}}^{(8)}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
Y_{1}^{4}+Y_{1} Y_{2}^{3}-3 Y_{1}^{2} Y_{2} Y_{3}+Y_{1} Y_{3}^{3} \\
Y_{2}^{4}+Y_{2} Y_{3}^{3}-3 Y_{1} Y_{2}^{2} Y_{3}+Y_{2} Y_{1}^{3} \\
Y_{3}^{4}+Y_{3} Y_{2}^{3}-3 Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}^{2}+Y_{3} Y_{1}^{3}
\end{array}\right) . \tag{3.14}
\end{align*}
$$

These are all the modular forms that will prove necessary for the models using two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries that will be discussed in two posterior sections.

### 3.1.2 Stabilisers and residual symmetries of modular $A_{4}$

But first a really critical property shall be discussed: the stabilisers of the modular symmetry, which play a crucial role in preserving residual symmetries. Given an element $\gamma$ in the modular group $A_{4}$, a stabiliser $\tau_{\gamma}$ of $\gamma$ corresponds to a fixed point in the upper half complex plane that transforms as $\gamma \tau_{\gamma}=\tau_{\gamma}$. Once the modular field acquires a VEV at this special point, $\langle\tau\rangle=\tau_{\gamma}$, the modular symmetry is broken but an Abelian residual modular symmetry generated by $\gamma$ is preserved. Obviously, acting $\gamma$ on the
modular form at its stabiliser leaves the modular form invariant:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma: Y_{I}\left(\tau_{\gamma}\right) \rightarrow Y_{I}\left(\gamma \tau_{\gamma}\right)=Y_{I}\left(\tau_{\gamma}\right) \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{I}(\gamma) Y_{I}\left(\tau_{\gamma}\right)=\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k} Y_{I}\left(\tau_{\gamma}\right) \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that, at the stabiliser, the modular form is an eigenvector of the representation matrix $\rho_{\mathbf{3}}(\gamma)$ for the given stabiliser that corresponds to the eigenvalue $\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}$, and thus the directions of the modular forms at the stabilisers can be easily determined. Furthermore, since the representation matrix is unitary, $\left|c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right|=1$.

The stabilisers for the $A_{4}$ modular group are shown in Table 3.1 [62].

| $\gamma$ | $\tau_{\gamma}$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $T_{\tau}, T_{\tau}^{2}$ | $i \infty, \frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$ |
| $S_{\tau} T_{\tau}, T_{\tau}^{2} S_{\tau}$ | $1,-\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}$ |
| $T_{\tau} S_{\tau} T_{\tau}, S_{\tau} T_{\tau} S_{\tau}$ | $0, \frac{3}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}$ |
| $T_{\tau} S_{\tau}, S_{\tau} T_{\tau}^{2}$ | $-1, \frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}$ |
| $T_{\tau}^{2} S_{\tau} T_{\tau}$ | $-1+i, \frac{1}{2}+\frac{i}{2}$ |
| $S_{\tau}$ | $i, \frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2}$ |
| $T_{\tau} S_{\tau} T_{\tau}^{2}$ | $1+i,-\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i}{2}$ |

Table 3.1: Stabilisers for the $A_{4}$ elements [62].

For the transformations $S_{\tau}, T_{\tau}, S_{\tau} T_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau} S_{\tau}$, the coefficients $\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}$ are

$$
\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}= \begin{cases}(-1)^{k} & \gamma=S_{\tau}, \tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i \text { or } \tau_{S_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2}  \tag{3.17}\\ 1 & \gamma=T_{\tau}, \tau_{T_{\tau 1}}=i \infty \\ \omega^{2 k} & \gamma=T_{\tau}, \tau_{T_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}} \\ \omega^{2 k} & \gamma=S_{\tau} T_{\tau}, \tau_{S_{\tau} T_{\tau}}=\omega \\ \omega^{2 k} & \gamma=T_{\tau} S_{\tau}, \tau_{T_{\tau} S_{\tau}}=-\omega^{2}\end{cases}
$$

The directions of the modular forms of weight $2 k=2,4,6$ and 8 for the stabilisers of these four elements are shown in Table 3.2. Additionally, we include the factors for each modular form. Although the directions for the modular forms of weight 2 and 4 had been previously introduced in [25], the factors were corrected here for the weight 4 triplets. These factors are written in function of $Y$, which is defined in general as the first component $Y_{1}$ of $Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2)}$, except for $\tau_{T_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$, when we define it as the third component $Y_{3}$ of that triplet since the first component happens to vanish. For $Y$, the explicit definitions for the weight 2 modular forms in terms of the Dedekind eta function, present in Appendix A.2, were used. The values the modular form singlets of weight 4,6 and 8 take at the stabilisers are additionally included in Table 3.3.

The other two stabilisers for $S_{\tau} T_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau} S_{\tau}$ were not considered in Tables 3.2 and 3.3 since the modular forms approach infinity for these two values of the modulus field. Notice also that the two

| $\tau_{\gamma}$ | weight 2 | weight 4 | weight 6 |  | weight 8 |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 3 | 3 | $3{ }_{1}$ | $3{ }_{2}$ | $3{ }_{1}$ | $3{ }_{2}$ |
| $\tau_{S_{\tau} T_{\tau}}=-\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \omega \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega^{2}\end{array}\right)$ | $Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega \\ \omega^{2}\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $-\frac{9}{8} Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -2 \omega \\ -2 \omega^{2}\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $\frac{27}{8} Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \omega \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega^{2}\end{array}\right)$ |
| $\tau_{T_{\tau} S_{\tau}}=\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \omega^{2} \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega\end{array}\right)$ | $Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega^{2} \\ \omega\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $-\frac{9}{8} Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -2 \omega^{2} \\ -2 \omega\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $\frac{27}{8} Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \omega^{2} \\ -\frac{1}{2} \omega\end{array}\right)$ |
| $\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ 1-\sqrt{3} \\ -2+\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $(4-2 \sqrt{3}) Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 1 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ | $(6 \sqrt{3}-9) Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ 1-\sqrt{3} \\ -2+\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $(21 \sqrt{3}-36) Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -2-\sqrt{3} \\ 1+\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $(63 \sqrt{3}-108) Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 1 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ | 0 |
| $\tau_{S_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2}$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ 1+\sqrt{3} \\ -2-\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $(4+2 \sqrt{3}) Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 1 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ | $-(6 \sqrt{3}+9) Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ 1+\sqrt{3} \\ -2-\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $-(21 \sqrt{3}+36) Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -2+\sqrt{3} \\ 1-\sqrt{3}\end{array}\right)$ | $-(63 \sqrt{3}+108) Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 1 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ | 0 |
| $\tau_{T_{\tau 1}}=i \infty$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | $\frac{2}{3} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | $Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | $Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
| $\tau_{T_{T 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{l}0 \\ 0 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ | $\frac{2}{3} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}0 \\ 1 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $Y^{3}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ | 0 | $Y^{4}\left(\begin{array}{l}0 \\ 0 \\ 1\end{array}\right)$ |

Table 3.2: Directions for the modular forms of weight 2, 4,6 and 8 of level 3 for four $A_{4}$ elements ( Y in Table 3.3).

| $\tau_{\gamma}$ | weight 4 |  | weight 6 | weight 8 |  |  | $Y$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | 1 | $1^{\prime}$ | 1 | 1 | $1^{\prime}$ | $1^{\prime \prime}$ |  |
| $\begin{aligned} & \tau_{S_{\tau} T_{\tau}}=-\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2} \\ & \tau_{T_{\tau} S_{\tau}}=\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2} \\ & \tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i \\ & \tau_{S_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2} \\ & \tau_{T_{\tau 1}}=i \infty \\ & \tau_{T_{\tau 2}}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0 \\ 0 \\ (6 \sqrt{3}-9) Y^{2} \\ -(6 \sqrt{3}+9) Y^{2} \\ Y^{2} \\ 0 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} \frac{9}{4} \omega Y^{2} \\ \frac{9}{4} \omega^{2} Y^{2} \\ -(6 \sqrt{3}-9) Y^{2} \\ (6 \sqrt{3}+9) Y^{2} \\ 0 \\ Y^{2} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} \frac{27}{8} Y^{3} \\ \frac{27}{8} Y^{3} \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ Y^{3} \\ Y^{3} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0 \\ 0 \\ (189-108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4} \\ (189+108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4} \\ Y^{4} \\ 0 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0 \\ 0 \\ -(189-108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4} \\ -(189+108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4} \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{gathered}$ | $\frac{81}{16} \omega^{2} Y^{4}$ $\frac{81}{16} \omega Y^{4}$ $(189-108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4}$ $(189+108 \sqrt{3}) Y^{4}$ 0 $Y^{4}$ | $\begin{gathered} 0.94867 \ldots \\ 0.94867 \ldots \\ 1.02253 \ldots \\ 0.54798 \ldots \\ 1 \\ -4.26903 \ldots \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ |

Table 3.3: Singlets for the modular forms of weight 4,6 and 8 of level 3 for four $A_{4}$ elements and factors Y for each stabiliser.
stabilisers of $S_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau}$ stabilise these two modular transformations but for different, although equivalent, representations in terms of $2 \times 2$ matrices, which means then different values for $c$ and $d$. This explains the different eigenvalues obtained for the two stabilisers of $T_{\tau}$. However, in spite of the eigenvalues being the same for both stabilisers of $S_{\tau}$, the directions the modular forms take at these stabilisers of $S_{\tau}$ are indeed different. In this case the difference comes from the existence of two eigenvectors for the same eigenvalue, eigenvectors that are introduced in the example that follows.

For $S_{\tau}: \tau \rightarrow-1 / \tau$, and using the stabiliser $\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i$, which stabilises the modular transformation represented by the $2 \times 2$ matrix in Eq.(2.28), the expression for the modular form at the stabiliser is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{\mathbf{3}}\left(S_{\tau}\right) Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}\right)=\left(-\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}\right)^{-2 k} Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}\right)=(-i)^{-2 k} Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}\right)=(-1)^{k} Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{T_{1}}}\right), \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and thus we obtain its directions from the eigenvectors of the representation matrix for $S_{\tau}$ (Eq.(3.2)) corresponding to the eigenvalue in the previous equation:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{T_{1}}}\right)=y_{\tau_{S_{+1}}, 1}^{(2 k)}\left(\begin{array}{c}
1 \\
1 \\
-2
\end{array}\right)+y_{\tau_{S_{1}}, 2}^{(2 k)}\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
-1 \\
1
\end{array}\right), k=1(\bmod 2)  \tag{3.19}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2 k)}\left(\tau_{S_{\tau_{1}}}\right)=y_{\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}}^{(2 k)}\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
1 \\
1
\end{array}\right), k=2(\bmod 2) \tag{3.20}
\end{align*}
$$

For the lowest weights that appear in Table 3.2, $y_{\tau_{S_{1}}, 1}^{(2)}=Y$ and $y_{\tau_{S_{1}}, 2}^{(2)}=\sqrt{3} Y$, and from the definitions of the modular forms of higher weight in terms of those of weight 2 we have that $y_{\tau S_{\tau 1}}^{(4)}=$ $(4-2 \sqrt{3}) Y^{2}$ and the factors for the two triplets with weight 6 are obtained similarly.

### 3.2 Tri-bimaximal mixing and related mixings

We have already introduced the main aspects of the $A_{4}$ modular group that are going to be useful in the models were are going to construct in this chapter. But given that for these three models we want to obtain the same mixing scheme, it seems wiser to start by introducing the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, which is the mixing derived from the tri-bimaximal especially useful for models dealing with $A_{4}$ symmetry groups. For the tri-bimaximal matrix we use the definition:

$$
U_{T B M}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & 0  \tag{3.21}\\
-\sqrt{\frac{1}{6}} & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & -\sqrt{\frac{1}{2}} \\
-\sqrt{\frac{1}{6}} & \sqrt{\frac{1}{3}} & \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

As already mentioned, this matrix is incompatible with the known experimental results due to the nonvanishing value for the angle $\theta_{13}$, which leads to the consideration of mixings that only preserve the first or the second columns of this matrix, the $\mathrm{TM}_{1}$ and $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixings, respectively, which can be written as the TBM matrix times a rotation between the two columns that are not preserved.

For $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$, which is our mixing of interest, the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is $U=U_{T B M} U_{r}$, where $U_{r}$ is a rotation between the first and third columns. Using the parametrization

$$
U_{r}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\cos \theta e^{i \alpha_{1}} & 0 & \sin \theta e^{-i \alpha_{2}}  \tag{3.22}\\
0 & e^{i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
-\sin \theta e^{i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & \cos \theta e^{-i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

we are then able to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$. Here, $\theta$ is the angle that governs the rotation and the three $\alpha_{i}$ are introduced such that the neutrino masses $m_{i}$ take real values.

The angles and phases from the standard parametrization of the PMNS matrix in [57] can be expressed in terms of the model parameters $\theta, \alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$ using the expressions between the parameters and the PMNS matrix elements (these expressions are equivalent to the ones in [25])

$$
\begin{align*}
\sin ^{2} \theta_{13} & =\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}=\frac{2 \sin ^{2} \theta}{3}  \tag{3.23}\\
\sin ^{2} \theta_{12} & =\frac{\left|U_{e 2}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{1}{3-2 \sin ^{2} \theta}  \tag{3.24}\\
\sin ^{2} \theta_{23} & =\frac{\left|U_{\mu 3}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{1}{2}+\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \frac{\sin 2 \theta}{2+\cos 2 \theta} \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)  \tag{3.25}\\
\delta & =-\arg \left(\frac{U_{e 3} U_{\tau 1} U_{e 1}^{*} U_{\tau 3}^{*}}{\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos ^{2} \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}}+\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}\right) \\
& =\arg \left(\left(e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin ^{2} \theta-3 e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \cos ^{2} \theta\right) \sin 2 \theta\right) \tag{3.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the $3 \sigma$ C.L. range of $\sin ^{2} \theta_{13}$ for $\mathrm{NO}(\mathrm{IO}), 0.02034(0.02053) \rightarrow 0.02430(0.02436)$ [59], we obtain the allowed range for $\sin \theta$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
0.1747(0.1755) \lesssim|\sin \theta| \lesssim 0.1909(0.1912) \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies also ranges for the other mixing angles (using that $-1 \leq \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right) \leq 1$ ):

$$
\begin{gather*}
0.3403(0.3403) \lesssim \sin ^{2} \theta_{12} \lesssim 0.3416(0.3417)  \tag{3.28}\\
0.3891(0.3890) \lesssim \sin ^{2} \theta_{23} \lesssim 0.6109(0.6110) \tag{3.29}
\end{gather*}
$$

The experimental $1 \sigma$ region is within the interval found for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{23}$, which overlaps with the $3 \sigma$ region for this parameter, with our result extending below the lower $3 \sigma$ limit for this parameter, $0.407(0.411)$ for $\mathrm{NO}(\mathrm{IO})$, and not reaching its upper limit. The range of allowed values for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ is near the upper allowed limit, which is a characteristic feature of the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, since the lowest value allowed for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ is $1 / 3$ as can be seen from Eq.(3.24).

We conclude that, in spite of the discrepancy found for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$, this is still a mixing that is worth considering.

### 3.3 Models with two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries - using the Weinberg operator

Now that the $A_{4}$ modular symmetry and the TBM and related mixings were introduced, the models that use this symmetry in order to get the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing can now be described. We will start by constructing one model where it is assumed that neutrinos get their mass through the Weinberg operator, and afterwards we introduce two models where the see-saw mechanism is used. At high energies, these models are based in two modular symmetries, $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with modulus fields denoted by $\tau_{l}$ and $\tau_{\nu}$, respectively. After the modulus fields acquire different VEV's, different mass textures are realised in the charged lepton and neutrino sectors, and thus the PMNS matrix will get the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing form.

In this section we consider that neutrinos get their mass through the Weinberg operator, which is an effective term of the type $\frac{1}{\Lambda} Y L^{2} H_{u}^{2}$. The transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings can be found in Table 3.4.

The Yukawa coefficients are modular forms and their weights were chosen in such a way that we obtain the desired directions when the modular fields gain a VEV at a given stabiliser: $Y^{l}$ is then a triplet of $A_{4}^{l}$ with weight +6 and $Y_{3}$ is a triplet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$ and trivial singlet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$ with both weights +4 so that they have the directions $(1,0,0)$ and $(1,1,1)$ at their stabilisers, respectively. We also considered the non vanishing weight 4 modular forms that will couple to $L^{2}, Y_{1}$ and $Y_{1^{\prime}}$, singlets 1 and $1^{\prime}$ under $A_{4}^{l}$, respectively, and both singlets 1 under $A_{4}^{\nu}$.

The right-handed lepton fields $e^{c}, \mu^{c}$ and $\tau^{c}$ are singlets $\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ and $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ of $A_{4}^{l}$, respectively, and trivial singlets 1 of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=+4$ and $2 k_{\nu}=-2$. Similarly the lepton doublets $L$ transform as a 3

| Fields | $S U(2)$ | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $L$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +2 | +2 |
| $e^{c}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | -2 |
| $\mu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | -2 |
| $\tau^{c}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | -2 |
| $H_{u, d}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $\Phi$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | 0 |


| Yukawas/Masses | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $Y^{l}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |
| $Y_{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | +4 |
| $Y_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | +4 |
| $Y_{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | +4 | +4 |

Table 3.4: Transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$.
of $A_{4}^{l}$ and a 1 of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=2 k_{\nu}=+2$. These are the correct choices for the weights such that the modular forms and fields in each term in the superpotential sum up to zero since the weight for the fields is not $2 k$, which are the values that were introduced in this section, but $-2 k$ instead (recall the transformation relations for the modular forms and the superfields, Eq.(2.44), and how the signs of the exponents where the weights enter differ). $H_{d}$ and $H_{u}$ are the usual Higgs and an additional Higgs doublet as required in supersymmetric models. A bi-triplet $\Phi$, which is a triplet under both $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$, is introduced to describe the breaking from the two modular $A_{4}$ groups to a single $A_{4}$.

With the fields assigned in this manner, the superpotential for this model, which can be separated into one part containing the mass terms for the charged leptons and the other the neutrino mass terms, has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w & =w_{e}+w_{\nu}  \tag{3.30}\\
w_{e} & =\left(\alpha\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}} e^{c}+\beta\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}} \mu^{c}+\gamma\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} \tau^{c}\right) H_{d}  \tag{3.31}\\
w_{\nu} & =\frac{1}{\Lambda}\left(\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} Y_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)+\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} Y_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)+\frac{1}{\Lambda}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \Phi Y_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)\right) H_{u}^{2} \tag{3.32}
\end{align*}
$$

where only the symmetric decomposition contributes to $\left(L^{2}\right)_{3}$.
$A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu} \rightarrow A_{4}^{D}$ breaking
We discuss now how the symmetry breaking from two independent $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu}$ to a single $A_{4}^{D}$ is achieved. We start by discussing the term $1 / \Lambda^{2}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \Phi Y_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right) H_{u}^{2}$. Considering the multiplication rules for two triplets to get a trivial singlet, this term can be explicitly expanded as:

$$
\frac{1}{\Lambda^{2}}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} P_{23}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\Phi_{11} & \Phi_{12} & \Phi_{13}  \tag{3.33}\\
\Phi_{21} & \Phi_{22} & \Phi_{23} \\
\Phi_{31} & \Phi_{32} & \Phi_{33}
\end{array}\right) P_{23} Y_{3}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right) H_{u}^{2}
$$

where $P_{23}$ is the matrix that permutes the second and third columns/rows:

$$
P_{23}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.34}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

If $\Phi$ acquires the $\mathrm{VEV}\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} P_{23}$ (see Appendix A. 3 for more details), the symmetry $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu}$ is broken but given that the same transformation $\gamma$ can be performed in $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$ simultaneously, there is still a single modular symmetry $A_{4}^{D}$ that is conserved (the diagonal subgroup). Under this symmetry, a modular transformation takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma:\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right) \rightarrow\left(\gamma \tau_{l}, \gamma \tau_{\nu}\right)=\left(\frac{a \tau_{l}+b}{c \tau_{l}+d}, \frac{a \tau_{\nu}+b}{c \tau_{\nu}+d}\right), \gamma \in A_{4} . \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently, the term $\frac{1}{\Lambda^{2}}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \Phi Y_{\mathbf{3}} H_{u}^{2}$ gets the form $\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda^{2}}\left(\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} Y_{\mathbf{3}}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} H_{u}^{2}$, which is invariant under the remaining symmetry. This term implies a mass matrix for the neutrinos when the Higgs doublet $H_{u}$ acquires a VEV.

Consequently, we obtain for $w_{\nu}$ (the $w_{e}$ terms remain exactly the same):

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{\nu}=\frac{1}{\Lambda}\left(\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} Y_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)+\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} Y_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)+\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} Y_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right)\right) H_{u}^{2} \tag{3.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

## $A_{4}^{D}$ breaking

The flavour structure after $A_{4}^{D}$ symmetry breaking now follows. We assume that the charged lepton modular field $\tau_{l}$ acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{l}\right\rangle=\tau_{T}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$, which is a stabiliser of $T_{\tau}$. At this stabiliser, a residual modular $Z_{3}^{T}$ symmetry is preserved in the charged lepton sector. This implies that the modular form $Y^{l}$, which has weight +6 , gets the direction

$$
Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right) \propto\left(\begin{array}{l}
1  \tag{3.37}\\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This direction leads to a diagonal charged lepton mass matrix when the Higgs field $H_{d}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{d}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{d}\right):$

$$
m_{e}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\alpha & 0 & 0  \tag{3.38}\\
0 & \beta & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \gamma
\end{array}\right)
$$

The masses for the charged leptons can be reproduced by adjusting the parameters $\alpha, \beta$ and $\gamma$. These constants were redefined to include any factor associated with $Y^{l}\left(\tau_{T}\right)$ and $v_{d}$.

For the other modular field $\tau_{\nu}$, we want to find a VEV that leads to a mixing that preserves the second column of the TBM mixing matrix. This occurs for $\left\langle\tau_{\nu}\right\rangle=\tau_{S}=i$ and $2 k_{\nu}=+4$, and, in this case, a residual modular $Z_{2}^{S}$ symmetry is preserved in the neutrino sector. According to Table 3.2, the direction of $Y_{3}$ at this stabiliser is going to be

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{l}, \tau_{\nu}\right) \propto\left(\begin{array}{l}
1  \tag{3.39}\\
1 \\
1
\end{array}\right)
$$

This implies the following structure for the neutrino mass matrix:

$$
M_{\nu}=g_{1}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.40}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)+g_{1^{\prime}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\frac{g_{3}}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
2 & -1 & -1 \\
-1 & 2 & -1 \\
-1 & -1 & 2
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $g_{1}, g_{1^{\prime}}$ and $g_{3}$ are arbitrary complex constants associated with the respective modular form contribution. Similarly to what was done for $\alpha, \beta$ and $\gamma$, the factors $2 v_{u}^{2} / \Lambda$ and $2 v_{u}^{2} v_{\Phi} / \Lambda^{2}$ and any factor coming from the modular forms were also included inside these complex constants.

We want now to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$, such that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=M_{\nu_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{1}, m_{2}, m_{3}\right)$, where $m_{i}$ are the neutrino masses and $U$ is an unitary matrix. In the present model, when we apply the tri-bimaximal mixing matrix Eq.(3.21) to the neutrino mass matrix we obtain:

$$
U_{T B M}^{T} M_{\nu} U_{T B M}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a & 0 & c  \tag{3.41}\\
0 & \frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c & 0 \\
c & 0 & b
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $a=g_{\mathbf{3}}+g_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{1}{2} g_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}, b=g_{\mathbf{3}}-g_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} g_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$ and $c=\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} g_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$. This matrix has only an element on the second row and second column and four elements on the corners that form a $2 \times 2$ symmetric matrix and so it can be fully diagonalized introducing a matrix $U_{r}$, which describes a rotation among the first and third columns, and thus preserves the second column. The matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is then $U=U_{T B M} U_{r}$. This is precisely the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, and using $U_{r}$ as defined in Eq.(3.22) we are then able to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$.

It is also possible to start from the diagonal matrix $M_{\nu_{d}}$ and get $U_{T B M}^{T} M_{\nu} U_{T B M}$. We have then:

$$
U_{r}^{*} M_{\nu_{d}} U_{r}^{\dagger}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
m_{1} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}}+m_{3} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & \frac{1}{2}\left(-m_{1} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}+m_{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\right) \sin 2 \theta  \tag{3.42}\\
0 & m_{2} e^{-2 i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
* & 0 & m_{1} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}}+m_{3} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where an asterisk was used to omit the non-vanishing off diagonal entry of this symmetric matrix. Comparing this with Eq.(3.41) we obtain that $\alpha_{3}=-\frac{1}{2} \arg \left(\frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c\right)$ and, more importantly, we get a mass sum rule for $m_{i}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
m_{2} & =\left|\frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c\right| \\
= & \left\lvert\, \frac{m_{1}}{2}\left(e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right)\right.  \tag{3.43}\\
& \left.\quad-\frac{m_{3}}{2}\left(e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) \right\rvert\, .
\end{align*}
$$

The sum rule Eq.(3.43) and Eqs.(3.23-3.26) are relations between the observables and the parameters of the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, and hence provide what is needed to do a numerical minimisation using the $\chi^{2}$
function:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi^{2}=\sum_{i}\left(\frac{P_{i}(\{x\})-B F_{i}}{\sigma_{i}}\right)^{2} \tag{3.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{i}$ are the values provided by the considered model, $B F$ the best fit value from NuFit [59] and $\sigma_{i}$ is also provided by NuFit, when averaging the upper and lower $\sigma$ provided. For the fitting, six variables were considered: the three mixing angles, the atmospheric and solar neutrino squared mass differences, and the Dirac neutrino CP violation phase.

The fit parameters obtained for normal ordering (NO) and inverted ordering (IO) of neutrino masses can be found in Table 3.5. The best fit values lie inside the $1 \sigma$ range for all the observables except $\theta_{12}$, for both orderings near the upper limit of the $3 \sigma$ range, and $\theta_{23}$ for IO. Nonetheless, all the observables are within their $3 \sigma$ intervals. The best-fit occurs for normal ordering of neutrino masses with a $\chi^{2} / 6=1.57$.

It is also possible to obtain the expected $m_{\beta \beta}$ for neutrinoless beta decay using the formula

$$
\begin{align*}
m_{\beta \beta} & =\left|\left(M_{\nu}\right)_{(1,1)}\right| \\
& =\left\lvert\, \frac{m_{1}}{6}\left(5 e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right)-\right.  \tag{3.45}\\
& \left.\quad-\frac{m_{3}}{6}\left(e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-5 e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) \right\rvert\, .
\end{align*}
$$

Doing a numerical computation, the allowed regions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ of Figure 3.1 (for $\mathrm{NO}, m_{\text {lightest }}=$ $m_{1}$ and, for IO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{3}$ ) were obtained, using again as constraints the data from [59]. In both figures it is also shown the current upper limit provided by KamLAND-Zen, $m_{\beta \beta}<61-165 \mathrm{meV}$ [64]. Results from PLANCK 2018 also constrain the sum of neutrino masses, although different constrains can be obtained depending on the data considered (for more details, see [65]). In the figures are plotted two shadowed regions, a very disfavoured region $\sum m_{i}>0.60 \mathrm{eV}$ (considering the limit 95\%C.L.,Planck lensing $+\mathrm{BAO}+\theta_{M C}$ ) and a disfavoured region $\sum m_{i}>0.12 \mathrm{eV}$ (considering the limit 95\%C.L.,Planck TT,TE,EE + lowE + lensing $+\mathrm{BAO}+\theta_{M C}$ ). These constraints on $\sum m_{i}$ can be expressed as constraints on $m_{\text {lightest }}$ using the best fit value for the squared mass differences: $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.198 \mathrm{eV}$ and $m_{\text {lightest }}>$ 0.030 eV for NO and $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.196 \mathrm{eV}$ and $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.016 \mathrm{eV}$ for IO, for the very disfavoured and the disfavoured regions respectively. We conclude then that only the NO in Table 3.5 is outside the disfavoured regions, although near.

For NO, there are some points compatible with the $1 \sigma$ ranges of the observables other than $\theta_{12}$ (which

| NO | Para. |  | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  | 1.57 | $10.51^{\circ}$ | $-10.21^{\circ}$ | $33.1{ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0227 eV | 0.0550 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{31}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $35.72^{\circ}$ | $49.4{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.56{ }^{\circ}$ | $224{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $2.514 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0188 eV |
| 10 | Para. |  | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{3}$ | $m_{1}$ |
|  |  |  | 2.74 | -10.57 ${ }^{\circ}$ | $152.76{ }^{\circ}$ | $48.71{ }^{\circ}$ | 0.1095 eV | 0.1201 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $35.73{ }^{\circ}$ | $46.5^{\circ}$ | $8.62{ }^{\circ}$ | $256{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $-2.497 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.1146 eV |

Table 3.5: Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$.


Figure 3.1: Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (darkred, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures there were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen $m_{\beta \beta}<61-165$ meV [64] and cosmological constraints from PLANCK 2018 (disfavoured region $0.12 \mathrm{eV}<\sum m_{i}<0.60$ eV and very disfavoured region $\sum m_{i}>0.60 \mathrm{eV}$ ) [65].
is, as already said, always near the upper $3 \sigma$ limit although below). These points were plotted with a darker red colour. For IO, at least one of the other observables is incompatible with its $1 \sigma$ region, as happened for the best fit value, hence only the $3 \sigma$ compatible points are shown for IO.

Only for normal mass orderings do we have points outside the disfavoured region. For IO, the minimum values for the $3 \sigma$ region are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{IO}} \approx 0.018 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{10} \approx 0.050 \mathrm{eV} . \tag{3.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

For NO, the compatible $3 \sigma$ region covers all orders of magnitude, but the $1 \sigma$ is limited from below:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.008 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.001 \mathrm{eV} . \tag{3.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

For this model that uses the Weinberg operator to generate the neutrino masses, NO is hence the preferred mass ordering, although this means that smaller orders of magnitude for both $m_{1}$ and $m_{\beta \beta}$, which are harder to access experimentally, are still compatible with experimental values for this model.

### 3.4 Models with two modular $A_{4}$ symmetries - using the see-saw mechanism

In this section, we construct two models that consider that neutrinos get their mass through the type I see-saw mechanism, using different weights for the fields and modular forms in each model. Again, both models are based in two modular symmetries, $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with modulus fields denoted by $\tau_{l}$ and $\tau_{\nu}$, that will acquire different VEV's, leading to a $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing.

### 3.4.1 $\quad A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu} \rightarrow A_{4}^{D}$ breaking

First, we start by discussing how the symmetry breaking from two independent $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu}$ to a single $A_{4}^{D}$ is achieved (this mechanism is shared by both models). The superfields considered for these models are $L$, which is a doublet of $S U(2)_{L}$ containing the left-handed leptons and a triplet under $A_{4}^{l}, \nu^{c}$, which is a triplet under $A_{4}^{\nu}$ containing the conjugate of the right-handed neutrino fields added to the Standard Model, and $H_{u}$, an additional Higgs doublet as required in Supersymmetric models. A bi-triplet $\Phi$, which is a triplet under both $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$, is introduced. $Y^{\nu}$ represents the Yukawa couplings that in the case of modular symmetries should be modular forms. One model considers a weight zero modular form (i.e. a modular field independent constant), and the other a singlet and a triplet under $A_{4}^{\nu}$.

We consider that neutrinos get their mass through the type I see-saw mechanism and the term from the superpotential that gives rise to a Dirac mass matrix is $\frac{1}{\Lambda} L \Phi Y^{\nu} \nu^{c} H_{u}$. This term is an effective term that can arise from renormalizable interactions of the fields shown with heavy messengers (not shown explicitly - a possibility for the messenger is an electroweak neutral field). Considering the multiplication rules for two triplets to get a trivial singlet, the term $\frac{1}{\Lambda} L \Phi Y^{\nu} \nu^{c} H_{u}$ can be explicitly expanded as:

$$
\frac{1}{\Lambda}\left(L_{1}, L_{2}, L_{3}\right) P_{23}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\Phi_{11} & \Phi_{12} & \Phi_{13}  \tag{3.48}\\
\Phi_{21} & \Phi_{22} & \Phi_{23} \\
\Phi_{31} & \Phi_{32} & \Phi_{33}
\end{array}\right) P_{23} Y^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \otimes\left(\begin{array}{c}
\nu_{1}^{c} \\
\nu_{2}^{c} \\
\nu_{3}^{c}
\end{array}\right) H_{u}
$$

where $Y^{\nu} \otimes \nu^{c}$ is the product between $Y^{\nu}$ and $\nu^{c}$ that gives a triplet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, and $P_{23}$ is the matrix that permutes the second and third columns/rows:

$$
P_{23}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.49}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

If $\Phi$ acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} P_{23}$ (see Appendix A. 3 for more details), the symmetry $A_{4}^{l} \times A_{4}^{\nu}$ is broken but given that the same transformation $\gamma$ can be performed in $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$ simultaneously, there is still a single modular symmetry $A_{4}^{D}$, the diagonal subgroup, that is conserved. The term $\frac{1}{\Lambda} L \Phi Y^{\nu} \nu^{c} H_{u}$ gets the form $\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda}\left(L Y^{\nu} \nu^{c}\right)_{1} H_{u}$, which implies a Dirac matrix term for the neutrinos when the Higgs doublet $H_{u}$ acquires a VEV.

### 3.4.2 Model 1

The first model we consider is a model were the Yukawa coupling $Y^{\nu}$ is simply a constant. The transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for this model are in Table 3.6.

The Yukawa coefficients $Y^{l}$ for the charged leptons are a modular form which transforms as a triplet of $A_{4}^{l}$ with weight $2 k_{l}=+6$, whereas $Y^{\nu}$ is simply a modulus independent constant, a modular form of weight 0 . For the right-handed neutrino masses we consider three modular forms transforming under $A_{4}^{\nu}: M_{1}$ as a trivial singlet $1, M_{1^{\prime}}$ as a singlet $1^{\prime}$ and $M_{3}$ as a triplet 3 , all with weights $2 k_{\nu}=+4$. Again,

| Fields | $S U(2)$ | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |  | Yukawas/Masses | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $L$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | -2 |  | $Y^{l}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |
| $e^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | +2 |  | $Y^{\nu}$ | $\mathbf{N}_{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $\mu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | +2 |  | $M_{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $\tau^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | +2 |  | $M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $\nu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | +2 |  | $M_{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $H_{u, d}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| $\Phi$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | 0 |  |  |  |  |  |  |

Table 3.6: Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$.
the weights were chosen in such a way that the modular forms acquire the desired directions as we show below.

The right-handed electron, muon and tau fields are respectively singlets $\mathbf{1 ,} \mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ and $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ of $A_{4}^{l}$ and trivial singlets 1 of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=+6$ and $2 k_{\nu}=+2$. The lepton doublets $L$ are arranged as a triplet of $A_{4}^{l}$ and a singlet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=0$ and $2 k_{\nu}=-2$. In this model, the three right-handed neutrinos introduced form a triplet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$ with weight $2 k_{\nu}=+2$. These are the correct choices for the weights such that the modular forms and fields in each term sum up to zero since the weight for the fields is not $+2 k$ but $-2 k$ instead (see Eq.(2.44) and how the signs of the exponents where the weights enter differ).

Note that, in spite of the charged leptons only having non-trivial singlet transformations under $A_{4}^{l}$ and the right-handed neutrinos only under $A_{4}^{\nu}$ (which justifies the nomenclature used), the respective weights introduce non-trivial transformations under both modular symmetries for these fields.

With the fields assigned in this manner, the superpotential for this model, which can be separated into one part containing the mass terms for the charged leptons and the other the neutrino mass terms, has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w & =w_{e}+w_{\nu},  \tag{3.50}\\
w_{e} & =\left(\alpha\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}} e^{c}+\beta\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{1^{\prime}} \mu^{c}+\gamma\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} \tau^{c}\right) H_{d},  \tag{3.51}\\
w_{\nu} & =\frac{Y^{\nu}}{\Lambda} L \Phi \nu^{c} H_{u}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} . \tag{3.52}
\end{align*}
$$

The bi-triplet $\Phi$ will then acquire a VEV and the two modular symmetries are broken to a single $A_{4}^{D}$, as presented in Section 3.4.1, getting for $w_{\nu}$ (the $w_{e}$ terms remain exactly the same):

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{\nu}=y_{D}\left(L \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} H_{u}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}}, \tag{3.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y_{D}=Y^{\nu} v_{\Phi} / \Lambda$.

## $A_{4}^{D}$ breaking

We consider now the flavour structure after $A_{4}^{D}$ symmetry breaking. As for the model using the Weinberg operator, we assume that the charged lepton modular field $\tau_{l}$ acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{l}\right\rangle=\tau_{T}=$
$\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$, which is a stabiliser of $T_{\tau}$, which implies that a residual modular $Z_{3}^{T}$ symmetry is preserved in the charged lepton sector. At this stabiliser, the modular form $Y^{l}$, will then acquire the direction

$$
Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right) \propto\left(\begin{array}{l}
1  \tag{3.54}\\
0 \\
0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This direction leads to a diagonal charged lepton mass matrix when the Higgs field $H_{d}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{d}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{d}\right):$

$$
m_{e}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\alpha & 0 & 0  \tag{3.55}\\
0 & \beta & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \gamma
\end{array}\right)
$$

The masses for the charged leptons can be reproduced by adjusting the parameters $\alpha, \beta$ and $\gamma$. These constants were redefined to include the constant associated with $Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)$ and $v_{d}$.

For the other modular field $\tau_{\nu}$, since we want to obtain the trimaximal mixing $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$, which preserves the second column of the tri-bimaximal mixing matrix, the modular form $M_{3}$ should acquire the direction

$$
M_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \propto\left(\begin{array}{l}
1  \tag{3.56}\\
1 \\
1
\end{array}\right)
$$

which occurs for the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{\nu}\right\rangle=\tau_{S}=i$, and thus it should have an even $k_{\nu}$, as happens for $2 k_{\nu}=+4$. In this case, a residual modular $Z_{2}^{S}$ symmetry is preserved in the neutrino sector. This implies the following structure for the right-handed neutrino mass matrix:

$$
M_{R}=c_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.57}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)+c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\frac{c_{\mathbf{3}}}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
2 & -1 & -1 \\
-1 & 2 & -1 \\
-1 & -1 & 2
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $c_{1}, c_{1^{\prime}}, c_{3}$ are complex constants associated with the respective modular form.
The Dirac mass matrix that relates the right-handed and active neutrinos after the Higgs field $H_{u}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{u}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{u}\right)$ is simply

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{D}=y_{D} v_{u} P_{23} \tag{3.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently, the active neutrino mass matrix for the see-saw mechanism gets the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{\nu}=-M_{D} M_{R}^{-1} M_{D}^{T}=-y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2} P_{23} M_{R}^{-1} P_{23} \tag{3.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

We want now to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$, such that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=M_{\nu_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{1}, m_{2}, m_{3}\right)$, where $m_{i}$ are the neutrino masses and $U$ is an unitary matrix. It is also true that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=-U^{T} M_{D} M_{R}^{-1} M_{D}^{T} U=M_{\nu_{d}}$. So $M_{D}^{T} U$ also diagonalizes the matrix $M_{R}^{-1}$ and thus $V=M_{D}^{\dagger} U^{*}$ diagonalizes $M_{R}$ such that $V^{T} M_{R} V=$
$M_{R_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}, M_{3}\right)$ where $M_{i}=-\frac{y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2}}{m_{i}}$. Conversely, $U=M_{D}^{*} V^{*}$ when $V$ diagonalizes $M_{R}$.
In the present model, when we apply the tri-bimaximal matrix in Eq.(3.21) to the heavy neutrino mass matrix, we obtain:

$$
U_{T B M}^{T} M_{R} U_{T B M}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a & 0 & c  \tag{3.60}\\
0 & \frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c & 0 \\
c & 0 & b
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $a=c_{\boldsymbol{3}}+c_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{1}{2} c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}, b=c_{\boldsymbol{3}}-c_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$ and $c=\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$. This matrix has only an element on the second row and second column and four elements on the corners that form a $2 \times 2$ symmetric matrix and so can be put into block diagonal form by permuting the first and second columns and rows. Thus, the full matrix can be fully diagonalized adding a matrix $V_{r}$ that introduces a rotation among the first and third columns. This rotation preserves the second column so $M_{R}$ is diagonalized by a $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing matrix, since this mixing matrix can be written as the product of the TBM mixing matrix and a rotation on the first and third columns. For the present model, $M_{D}$ is only a permutation, so we have that, being $V=U_{T B M} V_{r}$ the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{R}$, the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is $U=P_{23} U_{T B M} V_{r}$, which can also be written as $U_{T B M} U_{r}$, where $U_{r}$ is a rotation between the first and third columns. Using for $U_{r}$ the parametrization given by Eq.(3.22), which implies that

$$
V_{r}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\cos \theta e^{-i \alpha_{1}} & 0 & \sin \theta e^{i \alpha_{2}}  \tag{3.61}\\
0 & e^{-i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
\sin \theta e^{-i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & -\cos \theta e^{i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

we are then able to diagonalize both $M_{\nu}$ and $M_{R}$. Here, $\theta$ is the angle that governs the rotation and the three $\alpha_{i}$ are introduced such that $M_{i}$ are purely real values.

It is also possible to start from the diagonal matrix $M_{R_{d}}$ and get $U_{T B M}^{T} M_{R} U_{T B M}$. We have that

$$
V_{r}^{*} M_{R_{d}} V_{r}^{\dagger}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
M_{1} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{1}}+M_{3} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & \frac{1}{2}\left(M_{1} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}-M_{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\right) \sin 2 \theta  \tag{3.62}\\
0 & M_{2} e^{2 i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
* & 0 & M_{1} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{2}}+M_{3} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and comparing with Eq.(3.60) we obtain that $\alpha_{3}=\frac{1}{2} \arg \left(\frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c\right)$ and, more importantly, we get a mass sum rule for $M_{i}$ that can also be expressed in terms of the active neutrino masses $m_{i}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{m_{2}}= & -\frac{1}{y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2}}\left|\frac{a-b}{2}+\sqrt{3} c\right| \\
= & \left\lvert\, \frac{1}{2 m_{1}}\left(e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+\sqrt{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right)-\right.  \tag{3.63}\\
& \left.-\frac{1}{2 m_{3}}\left(e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+\sqrt{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) \right\rvert\, .
\end{align*}
$$

This sum rule has obvious similarities with the sum rule for the model using the Weinberg operator, Eq.(3.43), which comes from the fact that $M_{R}$ in this model, given by Eq.(3.57), and $M_{\nu}$ in the previous model, given by Eq.(3.40), have the same structure. Similarly to what can be found in [55], we can write
these sum rules as

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{2}^{\eta}=f_{1}\left(\eta \theta, \eta \alpha_{1}, \eta \alpha_{2}, \eta \alpha_{3}\right) m_{1}^{\eta}+f_{3}\left(\eta \theta, \eta \alpha_{1}, \eta \alpha_{2}, \eta \alpha_{3}\right) m_{3}^{\eta} \tag{3.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) e^{2 i \alpha_{3}}  \tag{3.65}\\
& f_{3}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right)=-\frac{1}{2}\left(e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-\sqrt{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) e^{2 i \alpha_{3}} \tag{3.66}
\end{align*}
$$

With these definitions, we can say that for the model where we use the Weinberg operator, we choose for the exponent $\eta=+1$ and thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{2}=f_{1}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right) m_{1}+f_{3}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right) m_{3} \tag{3.67}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, for the model using the see-saw mechanism, since the matrix that diagonalizes the matrix that has the same structure as $M_{\nu}$ in the model using the Weinberg operator is not $U_{r}$ but $V_{r}$ instead, apart from having $\eta=-1$ in the exponent, we will also have to exchange all the signs of the angles and complex phases. We will have then for the sum rule:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{m_{2}}=f_{1}\left(-\theta,-\alpha_{1},-\alpha_{2},-\alpha_{3}\right) \frac{1}{m_{1}}+f_{3}\left(-\theta,-\alpha_{1},-\alpha_{2},-\alpha_{3}\right) \frac{1}{m_{3}} \tag{3.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

The sum rule Eq.(3.63) and Eqs.(3.23-3.26) provide relations between the observables and the parameters of the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, and so we are able to do a numerical minimisation using the $\chi^{2}$ function Eq.(3.44). For the fitting, the three mixing angles, the atmospheric and solar neutrino squared mass differences and the Dirac neutrino CP violation phase were considered.

The fit parameters obtained for NO and IO of neutrino masses can be found in Table 3.7. The best fit values lie inside the $1 \sigma$ range for all the observables except $\theta_{12}$, as is characteristic of the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing, and $\delta$ for IO. Nonetheless, all the observables are within their $3 \sigma$ intervals. The best-fit occurs for normal ordering of neutrino masses with a $\chi^{2} / 6=1.57$.

| NO | Para. |  | $\chi^{2 / 6}$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  | 1.57 | $10.51{ }^{\circ}$ | -67.60 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -24.26 ${ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0141 eV | 0.0521 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{31}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $35.72^{\circ}$ | $49.4{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.56{ }^{\circ}$ | $224{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $2.514 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0131 eV |
| 10 | Para. |  | $\chi^{2 / 6}$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
|  |  |  | 2.04 | $10.56{ }^{\circ}$ | -95.56 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -38.93 ${ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0546 eV | 0.0236 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $35.73{ }^{\circ}$ | $48.4{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.61{ }^{\circ}$ | $237^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $-2.496 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0174 eV |

Table 3.7: Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$.


Figure 3.2: Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (dark-red, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1.

It is also possible to obtain the expected $m_{\beta \beta}$ for neutrinoless beta decay using the formula

$$
\begin{align*}
m_{\beta \beta} & =\left|\left(M_{\nu}\right)_{(1,1)}\right|=y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2}\left|\left(M_{R}^{-1}\right)_{(1,1)}\right| \\
& =\frac{1}{3}\left|2 m_{1} e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta+m_{2} e^{-2 i \alpha_{3}}+2 m_{3} e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta\right|, \tag{3.69}
\end{align*}
$$

where $m_{2}$ is given by Eq.(3.63). Doing a numerical computation, the allowed regions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ of Figure 3.2 (for NO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{1}$ and for IO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{3}$ ) were obtained, using again as constraints the data from [59]. In both figures it is also shown the current upper limit provided by KamLAND-Zen, $m_{\beta \beta}<61-165 \mathrm{meV}$ [64]. In both figures are also plotted two shadowed regions that take into account experimental results from PLANCK 2018 [65]. These constrain the sum of neutrino masses and consequently the mass of the lightest neutrino. These regions were previously discussed in Section 3.3: a very disfavoured region $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.198 \mathrm{eV}$ for NO and $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.196 \mathrm{eV}$ for IO (for which the limit 95\%C.L.,Planck lensing+BAO $+\theta_{M C}$ was considered) and a disfavoured region $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.030 \mathrm{eV}$ for NO and $m_{\text {lightest }}>0.016 \mathrm{eV}$ for IO (for which the limit $95 \% \mathrm{C} . \mathrm{L}$.,Planck $\mathrm{TT}, \mathrm{TE}, \mathrm{EE}+$ lowE+lensing+BAO $+\theta_{M C}$ was considered). We conclude then that only the fit for NO in Table 3.7 is outside the disfavoured region.

For NO , the points compatible with the $1 \sigma$ ranges of the observables other than $\theta_{12}$ were plotted with a darker red color. For IO, at least one of the other observables is incompatible with its $1 \sigma$ region, hence only the $3 \sigma$ compatible points are shown. Both mass orderings have points outside the disfavoured region, although the non-disfavoured region for IO is smaller. The minimum values considering the $3 \sigma$ ranges are

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\text {min }}^{\mathrm{N}} \approx 0.002 \mathrm{eV} & \left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.003 \mathrm{eV} \\
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\text {min }}^{1 \mathrm{O}} \approx 0.011 \mathrm{eV} & \left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\text {min }}^{10} \approx 0.015 \mathrm{eV}, \tag{3.70}
\end{array}
$$

and the the $1 \sigma$ region for NO is limited by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.006 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.007 \mathrm{eV} \tag{3.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for this first model using the see-saw mechanism, NO is the preferred mass ordering.

### 3.4.3 Model 2

It should be noted that it is possible to use other weights for the modular forms and still obtain a model with $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing. One example is a model where we substitute the fixed constant $Y^{\nu}$ of the previous model by a triplet modular form under $A_{4}^{\nu}$. However, in this case, the obtained matrix for the interactions between left and right-handed neutrinos would have a null eigenvalue associated with the eigenvector we want to preserve in $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$, which would lead to a massless effective neutrino corresponding to the second column of the PMNS. Therefore we need to further introduce an additional term for the model to be viable, or equivalently we should somehow keep the term from the previous model but taking into account that the weights in each term must always sum to zero.

The transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses are shown in Table 3.8. The weights for the $A_{4}^{l}$ symmetry remain the same as in the previous model given that the content of that symmetry was not changed, only of $A_{4}^{\nu}$, and as such just the $A_{4}^{\nu}$ weights will be introduced below.

| Fields | $S U(2)$ | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |  | Yukawas/Masses | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $L$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |  | $Y^{l}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |
| $e^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |  | $Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}$ | $\mathbf{N}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $\mu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |  | $Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}$ | $\mathbf{1}_{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $\tau^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +6 | 0 |  | $M_{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | +8 |
| $\nu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | +4 |  | $M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | 0 | +8 |
| $H_{u, d}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |  | $M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ | 0 | +8 |
| $\Phi$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | 0 |  | $M_{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | +8 |

Table 3.8: Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$.

The Yukawa coefficients $Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)$ remain the same. However, $Y_{1}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)$ is now a singlet under both symmetries with weights $2 k_{l}=0,2 k_{\nu}=+4$, and $Y_{3}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)$, a triplet under $A_{4}^{\nu}$ with weight $2 k_{\nu}=+4$, is introduced. It is then possible to assign a null value to $2 k_{\nu}$ for the right-handed charged leptons $e^{c}, \mu^{c}, \tau^{c}$ and the lepton doublets $L$, which means that, conversely to what happened for model 1 , no factors dependent on $\tau_{\nu}$ appear in the transformation relations for these superfields. That is to say that the leptons only transform under $A_{4}^{l}$ and the right-handed neutrinos only under $A_{4}^{\nu}$, with no addition of $\left(c \tau_{\nu}+d\right)^{-2 k_{\nu}}$ factors for the charged leptons as happened for model 1.

However, it should be pointed out that, even for model 1, it is possible to substitute the modular form of weight 0 by a singlet modular form of weight 4 , thus changing the transformation properties under $A_{4}^{\nu}$, given that different weights are now attributed. In fact, if we consider model 2 without adding the triplet $Y_{3}^{\nu}$, using the same weights, we obtain then the same mass matrices and mixing scheme as in
model 1, although now no $\tau_{l}$ dependent factor would appear in the transformation rule for $Y_{1}^{\nu}$ and the transformation relations for the leptons would look simpler too.

As already said, for the right-handed charged leptons $e^{c}, \mu^{c}, \tau^{c}$ and the lepton doublets $L$, the weights are now $2 k_{\nu}=0$ and consequently, for the three right-handed neutrinos $\nu^{c}$, the weight is $2 k_{\nu}=+4$ instead. This implies that the right-handed neutrino masses $M_{1}, M_{1^{\prime}}, M_{1^{\prime \prime}}$ and $M_{3}$ will have now $2 k_{\nu}=+8$. As before, these weights are chosen in such a way that the modular forms acquire the desired directions as we will see.

Again, neutrino masses can be generated through the type I see-saw mechanism, and, with the choices previously described, the superpotential has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w= & w_{e}+w_{\nu}  \tag{3.72}\\
w_{e}= & \left(\alpha\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}} e^{c}+\beta\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}} \mu^{c}+\gamma\left(L Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} \tau^{c}\right) H_{d}  \tag{3.73}\\
w_{\nu}= & \frac{1}{\Lambda} L \Phi Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \nu^{c} H_{u}+\frac{1}{\Lambda} L \Phi Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \nu^{c} H_{u}+ \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} . \tag{3.74}
\end{align*}
$$

The bi-triplet $\Phi$ will then acquire a VEV as before and the two modular symmetries are broken to a single one as discussed in Section 3.4.1. As seen previously, $w_{\nu}$ gets the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w_{\nu}=\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda}( & \left.L Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \nu^{c}+L Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} H_{u}+ \\
& +\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}}, \tag{3.75}
\end{align*}
$$

and $w_{e}$ does not change.

## $A_{4}^{D}$ breaking

The flavour structure after $A_{4}^{D}$ breaking is now going to be covered. We assume that the modular field $\tau_{l}$ acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{l}\right\rangle=\tau_{T}=\frac{3}{2}+\frac{i}{2 \sqrt{3}}$, stabiliser of $T_{\tau}$, as in the previous model. A residual modular $Z_{3}^{T}$ symmetry is preserved in the charged lepton sector and, when the Higgs field $H_{d}$ acquires a VEV, the $Y^{l}$ direction leads to a diagonal charged lepton mass matrix as in Eq.(3.55), and the masses for the charged leptons can be reproduced by adjusting the parameters $\alpha, \beta$ and $\gamma$ as before.

For the other modular field $\tau_{\nu}$, a residual $Z_{2}^{S}$ symmetry is conserved, given that, as seen previously, the modulus should acquire the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{\nu}\right\rangle=\tau_{S}=i$ for $M_{3}$ to have the direction $(1,1,1)$, and thus $M_{3}$ must have an even $k_{\nu}$, as happens for $2 k_{\nu}=+8$. Although in general we would have to consider instead of the mass triplet $M_{3}$ two triplets $M_{3_{1}}$ and $M_{3_{2}}$ arising from each triplet of weight 8 in Eqs.(3.13-3.14), in this case, given that the second weight 8 triplet vanishes at this stabiliser, we only have to consider the first weight 8 triplet. From Table 3.3 one knows also that none of the three singlets of weight 8 (Eqs.(3.10-3.12)) vanishes at this stabiliser, which accounts for the existence of $M_{1}, M_{1^{\prime}}$ and $M_{1^{\prime \prime}}$. This
implies the following structure for the right-handed neutrino mass matrix:

$$
M_{R}=c_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.76}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)+c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+c_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)+\frac{c_{3}}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
2 & -1 & -1 \\
-1 & 2 & -1 \\
-1 & -1 & 2
\end{array}\right),
$$

where $c_{1}, c_{1^{\prime}}, c_{1^{\prime \prime}}, c_{\mathbf{3}}$ are complex constants associated with the respective modular forms. The VEV the modulus field $\tau_{\nu}$ acquires will also imply a direction $(1,1,1)$ for $Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)$.

The term $\left(L Y_{3}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) \nu^{c}\right)_{1}$ will lead to two independent contributions, one when we multiply two of the triplets to get a symmetric triplet and then obtain a singlet by multiplying with the third triplet, and the other when we consider in the first step the antisymmetric contribution instead. In order to obtain the Dirac mass matrix, the $Y_{1}^{\nu}$ term is added to these two terms, all with different multiplicative constants, and we thus obtain $g_{1} Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(L \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+g_{2}\left(\left(L Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{S}} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+g_{3}\left(\left(L Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{A}} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}$, where the complex constants $g_{i}$ already account for the constants associated with the modular forms. The Dirac mass matrix that relates the right-handed and active neutrinos after the Higgs field $H_{u}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{u}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{u}\right)$ will then be

$$
M_{D}=y_{D} v_{u} g_{1}\left(\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{3.77}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\frac{h_{2}}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
2 & -1 & -1 \\
-1 & 2 & -1 \\
-1 & -1 & 2
\end{array}\right)+\frac{h_{3}}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & -1 & 1 \\
1 & 0 & -1 \\
-1 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right)
$$

where $h_{i}=g_{i} / g_{1}$ ( $g_{1}$ was chosen for the denominator given that, for the model to hold, it can not be taken to zero, as stated in the beginning of this section). Again, the active neutrino mass matrix for the see-saw mechanism is obtained through the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{\nu}=-M_{D} M_{R}^{-1} M_{D}^{T} \tag{3.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

The expressions for the entries of the neutrino mass matrix are much more complicated in this case since the Dirac mass matrix is not a permutation matrix as before. Nevertheless, the see-saw mass matrix is diagonalized by the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing matrix and again the PMNS matrix corresponds to the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing.

Doing a similar derivation to what was done for the first model, the mass sum rule for this model is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{1}{m_{2}}=\left\lvert\, \frac{1}{8 m_{1}}\right.\left(e^{2 i \alpha_{1}}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}+12 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}+8 h_{2}+12 h_{3}+4\right) \cos ^{2} \theta-\right. \\
&-e^{2 i \alpha_{2}}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}+12 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}-8 h_{2}-12 h_{3}+4\right) \sin ^{2} \theta- \\
&\left.-\sqrt{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}-4 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}-4\right) \sin 2 \theta\right)-  \tag{3.79}\\
&-\frac{1}{8 m_{3}}\left(e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}+12 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}-8 h_{2}-12 h_{3}+4\right) \cos ^{2} \theta-\right. \\
&-e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}+12 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}+8 h_{2}+12 h_{3}+4\right) \sin ^{2} \theta- \\
&\left.-\sqrt{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\left(4 h_{2}^{2}-4 h_{2} h_{3}-3 h_{3}^{2}-4\right) \sin 2 \theta\right)-3 M_{1^{\prime \prime}} \mid
\end{align*}
$$

Note that when the extra parameters introduced in model 2 vanish, $h_{2}=h_{3}=M_{1^{\prime \prime}}=0$, the sum rule for model 1, Eq.(3.63), is recovered.

Using this new sum rule with extra parameters, the best fit values shown in Table 3.9 were obtained. For NO, all the observables except $\theta_{12}$ are compatible with their $1 \sigma$ ranges. For IO, $\delta$ is also outside its $1 \sigma$ region, as happened for model 1, even though all of the observables are still within their $3 \sigma$ ranges. As for model 1 , NO provides the best fit, with $\chi^{2} / 6=1.57$, which is the same value found for model 1 using the see-saw mechanism and also for the model using the Weinberg operator. This is not surprising given the contribution to the $\chi^{2}$ is coming not from the masses, but from the mixing angles, and all these models give $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing.

| NO | Para. | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $h_{2}$ | $h_{3}$ | $M_{11^{\prime \prime}}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | 1.57 | $10.51^{\circ}$ | $102.16^{\circ}$ | $145.49^{\circ}$ | $-1.052-0.375 i$ | $0.788+0.114 i$ | $2.099+2.675 i$ | 0.0131 eV | 0.0518 eV |
|  | Obs. |  |  | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{31}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  |  |  | $35.72^{\circ}$ | $49.4{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.56{ }^{\circ}$ | $224{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $2.514 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0106 eV |
| 10 | Para. | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $h_{2}$ | $h_{3}$ | $M_{1^{\prime \prime}}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
|  |  | 2.03 | -10.56 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -6.17 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -131.13 ${ }^{\circ}$ | 0.767-0.825i | $-0.419+0.283 i$ | $1.855-0.727 i$ | 0.0929 eV | 0.0788 eV |
|  | Obs. |  |  | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  |  |  | $35.73{ }^{\circ}$ | $48.5{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.60^{\circ}$ | $236{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $-2.498 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0397 eV |

Table 3.9: Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$.


Figure 3.3: Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $1 \sigma$ (dark-red, NO only, except $\theta_{12}$ ) and $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model 2 using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{4}$. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1.

Furthermore, using Eq.(3.69) with $m_{2}$ given by Eq.(3.79), the allowed regions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$, shown in Figure 3.3 (as before, for $\mathrm{NO}, m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{1}$ and for $\mathrm{IO}, m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{3}$ ) were obtained. The experimental constrains that were already discussed in Section 3.3 are also included. As before, there are some points (with a darker red color) in the NO figure compatible with the $1 \sigma$ ranges for the observables other than $\theta_{12}$. For IO again no $1 \sigma$ compatible points are shown, given that all points are outside the $1 \sigma$ range for at least one of the other observables, as occurred for the best fit values.

However, these $1 \sigma$ points for NO do not form a characteristic structure as happened for model 1 but are dispersed within the other points that have at least an observable other than $\theta_{12}$ outside its $1 \sigma$ region.

For the fits shown in Table 3.9, only NO is outside the disfavoured region. From what has been written, it is inferred that, similarly to what happened for model 1, NO is once more the preferred mass ordering.

This second model is much less restrictive, and thus predictive, than the first one, since $m_{\text {lightest }}$ covers all orders of magnitude and almost all the available region for $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ and, more importantly, the minimum value for $m_{\beta \beta}$ also approaches zero. More specifically, model 1 is simply a special case of model 2 when we neglect all the extra parameters that where introduced in model 2 due to the new terms that appear when we assign a higher weight to the modular forms $Y^{\nu}$.

## Chapter 4

## Two $A_{5}$ Modular Symmetries for Golden Ratio 2 Mixing

In this chapter, we construct two models that use two $A_{5}$ modular symmetries in order to obtain the golden ratio mixing plus a rotation among the first and the third columns, one using the Weinberg operator and the other the see-saw mechanism to generate the neutrino masses. At high energies, the model is based in two modular symmetries, $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with modulus fields denoted by $\tau_{l}$ and $\tau_{\nu}$, respectively. After the modulus fields acquire different VEV's, different mass textures are realised in the charged lepton and neutrino sectors. We will start by introducing some properties of the $A_{5}$ modular symmetry group. Subsequently, the various possibilities of a golden ratio mixing and a rotation among two of its columns are investigated and concluded that only a rotation between the first and third column is compatible with the $3 \sigma$ confidence interval. Only then will these two models be introduced.

We note once again that [52] already employs a single $A_{5}$ modular symmetry and two moduli in models using the Weinberg operator to generate the neutrino masses. The model that uses some fixed points of the modular fields lead to the same mixing we are going to discuss here, although that is not explicit in [52].

### 4.1 Modular $A_{5}$ symmetry and residual symmetries

In the following subsection the $A_{5}$ symmetry group is introduced including some of its main properties as the modular forms of level 5 and its stabilisers, which apply for the specific case of $A_{5}$ modular symmetries and, as well as the stabilisers for the modular groups from $N=2$ to 5 , can be found in [62].

### 4.1.1 Modular $A_{5}$ symmetry and modular forms of level 5

The group $A_{5}$ is the group of even permutations of 5 objects and has 60 elements. It is generated by two operators $S_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau}$ obeying

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\tau}^{2}=\left(S_{\tau} T_{\tau}\right)^{3}=T_{\tau}^{5}=1 \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This group has one singlet 1 , two triplets 3 and $3^{\prime}$, one quadruplet 4 and one quintuplet 5 as its irreducible representations. The irreducible representations of the generators and the multiplication rules for the irreducible representations can be found in Appendix B.1.

Similarly to what was done for $\Gamma_{3} \sim A_{4}$, the Yukawa couplings in a theory that is invariant under a $\Gamma_{5} \sim A_{5}$ symmetry are also going to be modular forms, but in this case of level 5 . The eleven linearly independent weight 2 modular forms of level 5 form a quintuplet $Y_{5}^{(2)}=\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}, Y_{3}, Y_{4}, Y_{5}\right)$ of $A_{5}$, a triplet $3 Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(2)}=\left(Y_{6}, Y_{7}, Y_{8}\right)$ and a triplet $\mathbf{3}^{\prime} Y_{3^{\prime}}^{(2)}=\left(Y_{9}, Y_{10}, Y_{11}\right)$. These modular functions can be expressed in terms of the third theta function (see Appendix B. 2 for more details). The modular forms of higher weight are generated starting from these eleven modular forms of weight 2.

The space of the weight 4 modular forms of level 5 has dimension 21 and decomposes into a singlet 1 , one triplet 3 , one triplet $3^{\prime}$, a quadruplet 4 and two quintuplets 5 . Using the weight 2 modular forms, one obtains the following expressions for the weight 4 modular forms [52]:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{(4)}=Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5},  \tag{4.2}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{(4)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-2 Y_{1} Y_{6}+\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{7}+\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{6}+Y_{1} Y_{7}-\sqrt{6} Y_{3} Y_{8} \\
\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{6}-\sqrt{6} Y_{4} Y_{7}+Y_{1} Y_{8}
\end{array}\right),  \tag{4.3}\\
& Y_{3^{\prime}}^{(4)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{5} Y_{7}+Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{8} \\
Y_{4} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{4.4}\\
& Y_{4}^{(4)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 Y_{4}^{2}+\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{2}-Y_{3} Y_{5} \\
2 Y_{2}^{2}+\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{3}-Y_{4} Y_{5} \\
2 Y_{5}^{2}-Y_{2} Y_{3}+\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{4} \\
2 Y_{3}^{2}-Y_{2} Y_{4}+\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{5}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{4.5}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{(4)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2} Y_{1}^{2}+\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{4}-2 \sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{5} \\
\sqrt{3} Y_{4}^{2}-2 \sqrt{2} Y_{1} Y_{2} \\
\sqrt{2} Y_{1} Y_{3}+2 \sqrt{3} Y_{4} Y_{5} \\
2 \sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{3}+\sqrt{2} Y_{1} Y_{4} \\
\sqrt{3} Y_{3}^{2}-2 \sqrt{2} Y_{1} Y_{5} \\
\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{7}-\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
-Y_{2} Y_{6}-\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{8} \\
-2 Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7} \\
2 Y_{4} Y_{6}+\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8} \\
Y_{5} Y_{6}+\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{7}+\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{8}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{4.6}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}^{(4)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Furthermore, the modular forms of weight 6, whose linear space has dimension 31 and decomposes into one singlet 1 , two triplets 3 , two triplets $\mathbf{3}^{\prime}$, two quadruplet 4 and two quintuplets 5 , are the following
according to [52]:

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{(6)}=3 \sqrt{3}\left(Y_{2} Y_{3}^{2}+Y_{4}^{2} Y_{5}\right)+\sqrt{2} Y_{1}\left(Y_{1}^{2}+3 Y_{3} Y_{4}-6 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)  \tag{4.8}\\
& Y_{\mathbf{3}_{1}}^{(6)}=\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{l}
Y_{6} \\
Y_{7} \\
Y_{8}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.9}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
Y_{\mathbf{3}_{2}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\left(Y_{5} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{7}\right) Y_{7}+\left(\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{8}-Y_{2} Y_{6}\right) Y_{8}  \tag{4.10}\\
\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}-Y_{5} Y_{7}\right) Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{6} Y_{8}+\left(Y_{6}^{2}-Y_{7} Y_{8}\right) Y_{2} \\
\left(Y_{2} Y_{8}-\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}\right) Y_{8}+\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{6} Y_{7}-\left(Y_{6}^{2}-Y_{7} Y_{8}\right) Y_{5}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{3^{\prime}{ }_{1}}^{(6)}=\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{9}  \tag{4.11}\\
Y_{10} \\
Y_{11}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{3^{\prime} 2}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\left(Y_{4} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}\right) Y_{10}-\left(Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{8}\right) Y_{11}  \tag{4.12}\\
\left(Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{8}\right) Y_{9}-\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{5} Y_{7}+Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{10} \\
\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{5} Y_{7}+Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{11}-\left(Y_{4} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}\right) Y_{9}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{4_{1}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{6} Y_{3} Y_{8}-\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{6}-Y_{1} Y_{7}\right) Y_{9}-\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{6}-\sqrt{6} Y_{4} Y_{7}+Y_{1} Y_{8}\right) Y_{10}  \tag{4.13}\\
\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{6}-\sqrt{6} Y_{4} Y_{7}+Y_{1} Y_{8}\right) Y_{11}+\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{7}-2 Y_{1} Y_{6}+\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{10} \\
\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{6}+Y_{1} Y_{7}-\sqrt{6} Y_{3} Y_{8}\right) Y_{10}+\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{7}-2 Y_{1} Y_{6}+\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{11} \\
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{6} Y_{4} Y_{7}-\sqrt{3} Y_{5} Y_{6}-Y_{1} Y_{8}\right) Y_{9}-\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{2} Y_{6}+Y_{1} Y_{7}-\sqrt{6} Y_{3} Y_{8}\right) Y_{11}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{\mathbf{4}_{2}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{5} Y_{7}\right) Y_{7}+\left(Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{8}\right) Y_{8}  \tag{4.14}\\
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}-Y_{3} Y_{6}\right) Y_{6}+\left(Y_{4} Y_{6}+\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{7}+\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}\right) Y_{8} \\
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}-Y_{4} Y_{6}\right) Y_{6}+\left(Y_{3} Y_{6}+\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}+\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{8}\right) Y_{7} \\
\sqrt{2}\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{8}+\left(Y_{4} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{7}\right) Y_{7}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{(6)}=\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{1}  \tag{4.15}\\
Y_{2} \\
Y_{3} \\
Y_{4} \\
Y_{5}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
Y_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}^{(6)}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3}\left(\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}+Y_{5} Y_{7}+Y_{2} Y_{8}\right) Y_{6}  \tag{4.16}\\
\left(Y_{5} Y_{7}+\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}\right) Y_{7}+\left(3 Y_{2} Y_{7}+2 Y_{4} Y_{8}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{6}\right) Y_{8} \\
\left(Y_{3} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{2} Y_{7}\right) Y_{6}+2\left(Y_{5} Y_{8}+Y_{3} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{6}\right) Y_{8} \\
\left(Y_{4} Y_{6}-\sqrt{2} Y_{5} Y_{8}\right) Y_{6}+2\left(Y_{2} Y_{7}+Y_{4} Y_{8}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{6}\right) Y_{7} \\
\left(Y_{2} Y_{8}+\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{6}\right) Y_{8}+\left(3 Y_{5} Y_{8}+2 Y_{3} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{6}\right) Y_{7}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

### 4.1.2 Stabilisers and residual symmetries of modular $A_{5}$

As explained in Section 3.1.2, stabilisers of the symmetry play a crucial role in residual symmetries. Given an element $\gamma$ in the modular group $A_{5}$, a stabiliser of $\gamma$ corresponds to a fixed point in the upper
half complex plane that transforms as $\gamma \tau_{\gamma}=\tau_{\gamma}$. Once the modular field acquires a VEV at this special point, $\langle\tau\rangle=\tau_{\gamma}$, the modular symmetry is broken but an Abelian residual modular symmetry generated by $\gamma$ is preserved. Obviously, acting $\gamma$ on the modular form at its stabiliser leaves the modular form invariant, which implies that, at the stabiliser, the modular form is an eigenvector of the representation matrix $\rho_{I}(\gamma)$ for the given stabiliser that corresponds to the eigenvalue $\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}$, and thus the directions of the modular forms at the stabilisers can be easily determined (see Eq.(3.16)).

The stabilisers for the $A_{5}$ modular group are shown in Table 4.1 and can be found in [62].

| $\gamma$ | $\tau_{\gamma}$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $T_{\tau}, T_{\tau}^{2}, T_{\tau}^{3}, T_{\tau}^{4}$ | $i \infty, \frac{8}{5}$ |
| $S_{\tau}$ | $i,-\frac{70}{29}+\frac{i}{29}$ |
| $T_{\tau} S_{\tau}, T_{\tau} S_{\tau} T_{\tau} S_{\tau}$ | $\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2},-\frac{37}{26}+\frac{i}{26 \sqrt{3}}$ |
| $S_{\tau} T_{\tau}, S_{\tau} T_{\tau} S_{\tau} T_{\tau}$ | $-\frac{1}{2}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{2}, \frac{91}{38}+\frac{i \sqrt{3}}{38}$ |

Table 4.1: Stabilisers for some of the $A_{5}$ elements [62].

For the transformations $S_{\tau}, T_{\tau}, S_{\tau} T_{\tau}$ and $T_{\tau} S_{\tau}$, the coefficients $\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}$ are

$$
\left(c \tau_{\gamma}+d\right)^{-2 k}= \begin{cases}(-1)^{k} & \tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i  \tag{4.17}\\ 1 & \tau_{T_{\tau 1}}=i \infty\end{cases}
$$

The directions of the modular forms of weight $2 k=2$ and 4 for the stabilisers of the generators $S$ and $T$ are shown in Table 4.2. Additionally, we include the factors for each modular form. These factors are written in function of $Y$, which is defined in general as the first component $Y_{1}$ of $Y_{5}^{(2)}$. For $Y$, the definitions for the weight 2 modular forms present in Appendix B. 2 were used. The value the modular form singlet of weight 4 takes at the stabilisers is also included.

### 4.2 Golden ratio mixing and related mixings

The golden ratio (GR) mixing is a mixing associated in previous works with models based in the $A_{5}$ symmetry, and this is not different for models using multiple modular $A_{5}$. The mixing matrix that we will use is

$$
U_{G R}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\frac{\phi}{\sqrt{2+\phi}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{2+\phi}} & 0  \tag{4.18}\\
-\frac{1}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & \frac{\phi}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
-\frac{1}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & \frac{\phi}{\sqrt{4+2 \phi}} & -1 / \sqrt{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\phi=\frac{1+\sqrt{5}}{2}$. This mixing has the same problem as the TBM mixing: it is incompatible with the experimental results for $\theta_{13}$, and thus we want to work with models that preserve only the first or the second columns of the GR mixing matrix, that can be written as the GR matrix times a rotation between the other two columns.

For a model where the second column is preserved, the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is $U=U_{G R} U_{r}$,

| $\tau_{\gamma}$ |  | $\tau_{S_{\tau 1}}=i$ | $\tau_{T_{\tau 1}}=i \infty$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| weight 2 | 5 | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \frac{-1-\sqrt{7-4 \phi}}{\sqrt{6}} \\ \frac{-1-\sqrt{18-11 \phi}}{\sqrt{6}} \\ \frac{-1+\sqrt{18-11 \phi}}{\sqrt{6}} \\ \frac{-1+\sqrt{7-4 \phi}}{\sqrt{6}}\end{array}\right)$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
|  | 3 | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}\sqrt{\frac{58-31 \phi}{15}} \\ \frac{-9+8 \phi+\sqrt{27-4 \phi}}{\sqrt{30}} \\ \frac{9-8 \phi+\sqrt{27-4 \phi}}{\sqrt{30}}\end{array}\right)$ | $\sqrt{\frac{3}{5}} Y\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
|  | $3^{\prime}$ | $Y\left(\begin{array}{c}-\sqrt{\frac{3+4 \phi}{15}} \\ \frac{7-4 \phi+\sqrt{2+\phi}}{\sqrt{30}} \\ \frac{-7+4 \phi+\sqrt{2+\phi}}{\sqrt{30}}\end{array}\right)$ | $-\sqrt{\frac{3}{5}} Y\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
| weight 4 | 1 | $\frac{15 \sqrt{5}-25}{6} Y^{2}$ | $Y^{2}$ |
|  | 3 | $-\sqrt{\frac{100-40 \sqrt{5}}{3}} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ -\frac{\sqrt{3-\sqrt{5}}}{2} \\ -\frac{\sqrt{3-\sqrt{5}}}{2}\end{array}\right)$ | $-2 \sqrt{\frac{3}{5}} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
|  | $3^{\prime}$ | $\sqrt{\frac{125-55 \sqrt{5}}{2}} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}1 \\ \frac{\sqrt{3+\sqrt{5}}}{2} \\ \frac{\sqrt{3+\sqrt{5}}}{2}\end{array}\right)$ | $\frac{3}{\sqrt{5}} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
|  | 4 | $\frac{Y^{2}}{12}\left(\begin{array}{c}25-15 \sqrt{5}-5 \sqrt{10-2 \sqrt{5}} \\ 25-15 \sqrt{5}+5 \sqrt{130-58 \sqrt{5}} \\ 25-15 \sqrt{5}-5 \sqrt{130-58 \sqrt{5}} \\ 25-15 \sqrt{5}+5 \sqrt{10-2 \sqrt{5}}\end{array}\right)$ | 0 |
|  | $5_{1}$ | $Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}\frac{1}{6} \sqrt{15 \sqrt{5}+35} \\ \frac{-11 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{250-110 \sqrt{5}}+35}{4 \sqrt{3}} \\ -\frac{-7 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{5(5-2 \sqrt{5})}+15}{2 \sqrt{3}} \\ \sqrt{\frac{5}{3}(5-2 \sqrt{5})}+\sqrt{\frac{5}{6}(47-21 \sqrt{5})} \\ \frac{-11 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{250-110 \sqrt{5}}+35}{4 \sqrt{3}}\end{array}\right)$ | $\sqrt{2} Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0\end{array}\right)$ |
|  | $5_{2}$ | $Y^{2}\left(\begin{array}{c}-\frac{7-\sqrt{45}}{\sqrt{3}} \\ -\frac{1}{3} \sqrt{-173 \sqrt{5}+8 \sqrt{10-2 \sqrt{5}}+407} \\ \frac{2}{3} \sqrt{-61 \sqrt{5}+4 \sqrt{1930-862 \sqrt{5}}+143} \\ -\frac{2}{3} \sqrt{-61 \sqrt{5}-4 \sqrt{1930-862 \sqrt{5}}+143} \\ -\frac{1}{3} \sqrt{-173 \sqrt{5}-8 \sqrt{10-2 \sqrt{5}}+407}\end{array}\right)$ | 0 |
| $Y$ |  | 2.594...i | $\sqrt{\frac{2}{3}} \pi i$ |

Table 4.2: Directions for the modular forms of weight 2 and 4 of level 5 for the $A_{5}$ generators.
where $U_{r}$ is a rotation between the first and third columns. Using the parametrisation

$$
U_{r}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\cos \theta e^{i \alpha_{1}} & 0 & \sin \theta e^{-i \alpha_{2}}  \tag{4.19}\\
0 & e^{i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
-\sin \theta e^{i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & \cos \theta e^{-i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

we are then able to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$. Here, $\theta$ is the angle that governs the rotation and the three $\alpha_{i}$ are introduced such that $m_{i}$ are purely real values.

The angles and phases from the standard parametrisation of the PMNS matrix in [57] can be expressed in terms of the model parameters $\theta, \alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$ using the expressions between the parameters and the PMNS matrix elements:

$$
\begin{align*}
\sin ^{2} \theta_{13} & =\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}=\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{10} \sin ^{2} \theta  \tag{4.20}\\
\sin ^{2} \theta_{12} & =\frac{\left|U_{e 2}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{3-\sqrt{5}}{4-\sqrt{5}+\cos 2 \theta}  \tag{4.21}\\
\sin ^{2} \theta_{23} & =\frac{\left|U_{\mu 3}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{4-\sqrt{5}+\cos 2 \theta-2 \sqrt{5-2 \sqrt{5}} \sin 2 \theta \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)}{8-2 \sqrt{5}+2 \cos 2 \theta}  \tag{4.22}\\
\delta & =-\arg \left(\frac{U_{e 3} U_{\tau 1} U_{e 1}^{*} U_{\tau 3}^{*}}{\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos ^{2} \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}}+\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}\right) \\
& =\arg \left(\sin 2 \theta\left(\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{2} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin ^{2} \theta\right)\right) . \tag{4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the $3 \sigma$ C.L. range of $\sin ^{2} \theta_{13}$ for $\mathrm{NO}(\mathrm{IO}), 0.02034(0.02053) \rightarrow 0.02430(0.02436)$ [59], we obtain the allowed range for $\sin \theta$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
0.1677(0.1684) \lesssim|\sin \theta| \lesssim 0.1833(0.1835) \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies also ranges for the other mixing angles (using that $-1 \leq \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right) \leq 1$ ):

$$
\begin{align*}
0.2821(0.2822) & \lesssim \sin ^{2} \theta_{12} \lesssim 0.2833(0.2833)  \tag{4.25}\\
0.4029(0.4028) & \sin ^{2} \theta_{23} \lesssim 0.5971(0.5972) \tag{4.26}
\end{align*}
$$

The $1 \sigma$ NuFit region is within the interval found for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{23}$, which overlaps with the $3 \sigma$ region for this parameter, with our result extending below $0.407(0.411)$ for $\mathrm{NO}(\mathrm{IO})$ and not reaching its upper limit. The range of allowed values for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ is near the lowest limit of the $1 \sigma$ region although outside.

For a model where the first column is preserved instead, the rotation matrix $U_{r}$ between the second and third columns can be parametrised as:

$$
U_{r}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
e^{i \alpha_{3}} & 0 & 0  \tag{4.27}\\
0 & \cos \theta e^{i \alpha_{1}} & \sin \theta e^{-i \alpha_{2}} \\
0 & -\sin \theta e^{i \alpha_{2}} & \cos \theta e^{-i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Again, $\theta$ is the angle that governs the rotation and the three $\alpha_{i}$ are introduced such that the three neutrino masses $m_{i}$ have purely real values.

For this model, the expressions for the angles and phases from the standard parametrisation of the PMNS matrix in [57] in terms of the model parameters $\theta, \alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$ are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sin ^{2} \theta_{13}=\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}=\frac{5-\sqrt{5}}{10} \sin ^{2} \theta \tag{4.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\sin ^{2} \theta_{12} & =\frac{\left|U_{e 2}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{2 \cos ^{2} \theta}{4+\sqrt{5}+\cos 2 \theta}  \tag{4.29}\\
\sin ^{2} \theta_{23} & =\frac{\left|U_{\mu 3}\right|^{2}}{1-\left|U_{e 3}\right|^{2}}=\frac{4+\sqrt{5}+\cos 2 \theta+2 \sqrt{5+2 \sqrt{5}} \sin 2 \theta \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)}{8+2 \sqrt{5}+2 \cos 2 \theta}  \tag{4.30}\\
\delta & =-\arg \left(\frac{U_{e 3} U_{\tau 1} U_{e 1}^{*} U_{\tau 3}^{*}}{\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos ^{2} \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}}+\cos \theta_{12} \sin \theta_{13} \cos \theta_{23}\right) \\
& =\arg \left(\sin 2 \theta\left(\frac{5-\sqrt{5}}{2} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \cos ^{2} \theta-e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin ^{2} \theta\right)\right) \tag{4.31}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the $3 \sigma$ C.L. range of $\sin ^{2} \theta_{13}$ for $\mathrm{NO}(\mathrm{IO}), 0.02034(0.02053) \rightarrow 0.02430(0.02436)$ [59], we obtain the allowed range for $\sin \theta$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
0.2713(0.2725) \lesssim|\sin \theta| \lesssim 0.2965(0.2969) \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies also ranges for the other mixing angles (using that $-1 \leq \cos \left(\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}\right) \leq 1$ ):

$$
\begin{align*}
0.2584(0.2583) & \lesssim \sin ^{2} \theta_{12} \lesssim 0.2614(0.2612)  \tag{4.33}\\
0.2531(0.2528) & \sin ^{2} \theta_{23} \lesssim 0.7469(0.7472) \tag{4.34}
\end{align*}
$$

We conclude that the range of allowed values for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ is outside the $3 \sigma$ region and thus the class of models that preserve the first column of the golden ratio mixing matrix, which we call $\mathrm{GR}_{1}$ mixing, are disfavoured by experiment.

Consequently, in the following we are only interested in models that preserve the second column of the golden ratio mixing, which we call $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$, although, as pointed out previously, even for these models $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ is outside the experimental $1 \sigma$ interval.

### 4.3 Models with two modular $A_{5}$ symmetries - using the Weinberg operator

Now that the $A_{5}$ modular symmetry and the mixing derived from the GR mixing were introduced, the models that use this symmetry in order to get what we called the $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing can now be described. We will start by constructing one model where it is assumed that neutrinos get their mass through the Weinberg operator, and afterwards another model where the see-saw mechanism is used is introduced. At high energies, these models are based in two modular symmetries, $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with modulus fields denoted by $\tau_{l}$ and $\tau_{\nu}$, respectively. After the modulus fields acquire different VEV's, different mass textures are realised in the charged lepton and neutrino sectors, in such a way that the GR ${ }_{2}$ mixing is recovered for the PMNS.

In this section we consider that neutrinos get their mass through an effective term of the type $\frac{1}{\Lambda} Y L^{2} H_{u}^{2}$. The transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings can be found in Table 4.3.

All the Yukawa coefficients $Y^{l}$ and $Y^{\nu}$ are modular forms of weight 4. The right-handed lepton fields $E^{c}$ are arranged as a triplet $\mathbf{3}$ or $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ of $A_{5}^{l}$ and singlets 1 of $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=+4$ and $2 k_{\nu}=-2$.
$\left.\begin{array}{c||c|c|c|c|ccc|c|c|c|c}\hline \text { Fields } & S U(2) & A_{5}^{l} & A_{5}^{\nu} & 2 k_{l} & 2 k_{\nu} & & & \text { Yukawas/Masses } & A_{5}^{l} & A_{5}^{\nu} & 2 k_{l}\end{array}\right) 2 k_{\nu}$.

Table 4.3: Transformation properties of fields and Yukawa couplings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$.

Similarly the lepton doublets $L$ transform as a $3^{(\prime)}$ of $A_{5}^{l}$ and a 1 of $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=0$ and $2 k_{\nu}=+2$. These are the correct choices for the weights such that the modular forms and fields in each term sum up to zero since the weight for the fields is not $2 k$, which are the values that were introduced in this section, but $-2 k$ instead. $H_{d}$ and $H_{u}$ are the usual Higgs and an additional Higgs doublet as required in supersymmetric models. A bi-quintuplet $\Phi$, which is a quintuplet under both $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$, is introduced.

The multiplication of two triplets has the decomposition $3^{(\prime)} \otimes \mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}=\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{(\prime)} \oplus \mathbf{5}$, where the $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ component is antisymmetric. This means that $L^{2}$ only decomposes as $\mathbf{1} \otimes \mathbf{5}$, and so it must combine with a singlet or quintuplet. This implies that we have only to consider the contributions from $Y_{1}^{\nu}, Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}$ and $Y_{5_{2}}^{\nu}$, each associated with a different complex constant $g_{i}$. For $Y^{\nu}$, we only consider the contribution from $5_{1}$ since the other weight $45_{2}$ will vanish at the chosen stabiliser for $\tau_{\nu}$ as is shown below.

With the fields assigned in this manner, the superpotential for this model, which can be separated into one part containing the mass terms for the charged leptons and the other the neutrino mass terms, has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w & =w_{e}+w_{\nu}  \tag{4.35}\\
w_{e} & =\left(\alpha_{1} Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\alpha_{2} Y_{\left.\mathbf{3}^{\prime \prime}\right)}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}}+\alpha_{3} Y_{\mathbf{5}}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}\right) H_{d}  \tag{4.36}\\
w_{\nu} & =\frac{1}{\Lambda} L^{2}\left[Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+\frac{1}{\Lambda} \Phi\left(Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+Y_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)\right] H_{u}^{2} \tag{4.37}
\end{align*}
$$

$A_{5}^{l} \times A_{5}^{\nu} \rightarrow A_{5}^{D}$ breaking

Considering the multiplication rules for two quintuplets to get a trivial singlet, the term $\frac{1}{\Lambda^{2}} L^{2} \Phi Y^{\nu} H_{u}^{2}$ can be explicitly expanded as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\Lambda^{2}}\left(L^{2}\right)_{5}^{T} P_{\pi} \Phi P_{\pi} Y_{\mathbf{5}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) H_{u}^{2} \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{\pi}$ is the matrix that describes the permutation

$$
\pi=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5  \tag{4.39}\\
1 & 5 & 4 & 3 & 2
\end{array}\right)
$$

which is explicitly

$$
P_{\pi}=\left(\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0  \tag{4.40}\\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

If $\Phi$ acquires the $\mathrm{VEV}\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} P_{\pi}$ (see Appendix B. 3 for more details), the term in Eq.(4.38)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda^{2}}\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}^{T} P_{\pi} Y_{\mathbf{5}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right) H_{u}^{2} \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that $w_{\nu}$ gets the form (the $w_{e}$ terms remain exactly the same):

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{\nu}=\frac{1}{\Lambda}\left[\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+\frac{v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda}\left(\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+\left(L^{2}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} Y_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}^{\nu}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)_{\mathbf{1}}\right] H_{u}^{2} \tag{4.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that the symmetry $A_{5}^{l} \times A_{5}^{\nu}$ is broken but given that the same transformation $\gamma$ can be performed in $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$ simultaneously and being the terms in the superpotential above all left invariant by such a transformation, there is still a single modular symmetry $A_{5}^{D}$, the diagonal subgroup, that is conserved.

The superpotential above implies a neutrino mass matrix. Expanding $Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}$ and $Y_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}^{\nu}$ in terms of the weight 2 modular functions gives the results already derived in [52]. If the triplets $L, E^{c}$ and $\nu^{c}$ are triplets 3 , which we will simply write as $\rho_{L} \sim 3$, the neutrino mass matrix after the Higgs field acquires the VEV $\left\langle H_{u}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{u}\right)$ gets the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{\nu}^{3} & =g_{\mathbf{1}}\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{5} Y_{7}-Y_{2} Y_{8} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{5} Y_{6}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{4} Y_{7}-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{8} & \frac{1}{2} Y_{2} Y_{6}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{3} Y_{8}+\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{7} \\
* & Y_{5} Y_{8}+\sqrt{2} Y_{4} Y_{6} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{5} Y_{7}+\frac{1}{2} Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
* & * & -Y_{2} Y_{7}-\sqrt{2} Y_{3} Y_{6}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{1}^{2}+Y_{3} Y_{4}-2 Y_{2} Y_{5} & -\frac{3}{2 \sqrt{2}} Y_{3}^{2}+\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{5} & -\frac{3}{2 \sqrt{2}} Y_{4}^{2}+\sqrt{3} Y_{1} Y_{2} \\
* & 3 Y_{2} Y_{3}+\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{4} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{1}^{2}-\frac{1}{2} Y_{3} Y_{4}+Y_{2} Y_{5} \\
* & * & 3 Y_{4} Y_{5}+\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{3}
\end{array}\right), \tag{4.43}
\end{align*}
$$

where asterisks were used to omit the off diagonal entries of symmetric matrices and $g_{\mathbf{1}}, g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}$ and $g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}$ are arbitrary complex constants associated with the respective modular form contribution. The factors $2 v_{u}^{2} / \Lambda$ and $2 v_{u}^{2} v_{\Phi} / \Lambda^{2}$ are included inside these constants.

If the triplets $L, E^{c}$ and $\nu^{c}$ are triplets $3^{\prime}$ instead, which can be equivalently expressed as $\rho_{L} \sim 3^{\prime}$,
one obtains:

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{\nu}^{3^{\prime}} & =g_{\mathbf{1}}\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{5_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{5} Y_{7}-Y_{2} Y_{8} & -Y_{4} Y_{6}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{5} Y_{8} & Y_{3} Y_{6}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{7} \\
* & -Y_{3} Y_{8}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{6}-\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{7} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{5} Y_{7}+\frac{1}{2} Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
* & * & Y_{4} Y_{7}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{5} Y_{6}+\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{8}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{5_{\mathbf{5}}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{1}^{2}+Y_{3} Y_{4}-2 Y_{2} Y_{5} & -\frac{3}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{3}-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{4} & -\frac{3}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{4} Y_{5}-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{3} \\
* & \frac{3}{2} Y_{4}^{2}-\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{2} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{1}^{2}-\frac{1}{2} Y_{3} Y_{4}+Y_{2} Y_{5} \\
* & * & \frac{3}{2} Y_{3}^{2}-\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{5}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.44}
\end{align*}
$$

where again $g_{1}, g_{5_{1}}$ and $g_{5_{2}}$ are arbitrary complex constants associated with the respective modular form contribution that absorbed the factors $2 v_{u}^{2} / \Lambda$ and $2 v_{u}^{2} v_{\Phi} / \Lambda^{2}$.

## $A_{5}^{D}$ breaking

The flavour structure after $A_{5}^{D}$ symmetry breaking will now be covered. We assume that the charged lepton modular field $\tau_{l}$ acquires the VEV $\left\langle\tau_{l}\right\rangle=\tau_{T}=i \infty$. This is a stabiliser of $T_{\tau}$ which means that a residual modular $Z_{5}^{T}$ symmetry is preserved in the charged lepton sector. The directions the modular forms take at this stabiliser are in Table 4.2. These directions lead to an almost diagonal charged lepton mass matrix when the Higgs field $H_{d}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{d}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{d}\right)$ :

$$
m_{e}=v_{d} \alpha_{1}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1+2 \frac{\alpha_{3}}{\alpha_{1}} & 0 & 0  \tag{4.45}\\
0 & 0 & 1-\frac{\alpha_{2}}{\alpha_{1}}-\frac{\alpha_{3}}{\alpha_{1}} \\
0 & 1+\frac{\alpha_{2}}{\alpha_{1}}-\frac{\alpha_{3}}{\alpha_{1}} & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

The masses for the charged leptons can be reproduced by adjusting the parameters $\alpha_{i}$. These constants were redefined to include the constant associated with $Y^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)$. This matrix can be diagonalized by multiplying on the left and right by $P_{L}$ and $P_{R}\left(P_{L}^{T} m_{e} P_{R}=m_{e_{d}}\right)$ by taking $P_{L}$ as the identity matrix and $P_{R}=P_{23}$. Consequently, the PMNS matrix is simply the matrix that diagonalizes the mass matrix for the neutrinos. These considerations are valid whether we choose the triplets in the model to be 3 or $3^{\prime}$.

For the other modular field $\tau_{\nu}$, we want to find a VEV that leads to a mixing that preserves the second column of the GR mixing matrix. This occurs for $\left\langle\tau_{\nu}\right\rangle=\tau_{S}=i$ and for $Y^{\nu}$ with weight 4 (see Table 4.2 for the directions the modular forms get at this stabiliser). In this case, a residual modular $Z_{2}^{S}$ symmetry is preserved in the neutrino sector.

If $\rho_{L} \sim \mathbf{3}$, this implies the following structure for the neutrino mass matrix:
$M_{\nu}^{3}=g_{1}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0\end{array}\right)$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +g_{5_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\sqrt{\frac{241}{8}+13 \sqrt{5}-\sqrt{1525+682 \sqrt{5}}} & -\sqrt{\frac{241}{8}+13 \sqrt{5}+\sqrt{1525+682 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & -3-2 \sqrt{5}+\sqrt{50+22 \sqrt{5}} & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & -3-2 \sqrt{5}-\sqrt{50+22 \sqrt{5}}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\frac{3}{2} \sqrt{\frac{949}{2}-212 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{103445-46262 \sqrt{5}}} & -\frac{3}{2} \sqrt{\frac{949}{2}-212 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{103445-46262 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & \frac{3}{2}(18-8 \sqrt{5}+\sqrt{130-58 \sqrt{5}}) & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & \frac{3}{2}(18-8 \sqrt{5}-\sqrt{130-58 \sqrt{5}})
\end{array}\right) \\
& \approx\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
g_{\mathbf{1}}+g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & -1.99176 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}-0.578608 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & -10.6968 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}-1.30628 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} \\
* & 2.48746 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+0.999728 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & g_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{1}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}-\frac{1}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}} \\
* & * & -17.4317 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}-0.665359 g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.46}
\end{align*}
$$

where $g_{\mathbf{1}}, g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}$ and $g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}$ were redefined to include factors coming from the modular forms $Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{\nu}, Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}$ and $Y_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}^{\nu}$.
We want now to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$, such that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=M_{\nu_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{1}, m_{2}, m_{3}\right)$, where $m_{i}$ are the neutrino masses and $U$ is an unitary matrix. When we apply the golden ratio mixing matrix Eq.(4.18) to the neutrino mass matrix for triplets 3 one obtains:

$$
U_{G R}^{T} M_{\nu}^{3} U_{G R}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\frac{1}{10}((7 \sqrt{5}+5) a+(7 \sqrt{5}-5) b+16 \sqrt{5} c) & 0 & 0  \tag{4.47}\\
0 & a & c \\
0 & c & b
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $a=g_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{13 \sqrt{5}+25}{4} g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+\frac{27 \sqrt{5}-65}{4} g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}, b=-2 g_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{4 \sqrt{5}+5}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+\frac{55-24 \sqrt{5}}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}$ and $c=(3 \sqrt{5}+5) g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+$ $\frac{3(7 \sqrt{5}-15)}{2} g_{5_{2}}$.

This implies that the PMNS is simply the Golden Ratio matrix times a rotation among the second and third columns, conserving only its first column. We have already discussed the compatibility of the $\mathrm{GR}_{1}$ mixing and experimental values in Section 4.2, where it has already been seen that this mixing is incompatible with the $3 \sigma$ confidence interval for $\theta_{12}$. For this reason, we will not further develop the case $\rho_{L} \sim 3$.

We now turn our attention to $M_{\nu}^{3^{\prime}}$. For $\rho_{L} \sim 3^{\prime}$, we have the following structure for the neutrino mass matrix:

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{\nu}^{3^{\prime}} & =g_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\sqrt{\frac{79}{2}+17 \sqrt{5}-\sqrt{2770+1238 \sqrt{5}}} & \sqrt{\frac{79}{2}+17 \sqrt{5}+\sqrt{2770+1238 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & \frac{9}{2}+2 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{5+2 \sqrt{5}} & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & \frac{9}{2}+2 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{5+2 \sqrt{5}}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\frac{3}{2} \sqrt{387-173 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{41810-18698 \sqrt{5}}} & \frac{3}{2} \sqrt{387-173 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{41810-18698 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & -\frac{51}{2}+12 \sqrt{5}+3 \sqrt{85-38 \sqrt{5}} & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & -\frac{51}{2}+12 \sqrt{5}-3 \sqrt{85-38 \sqrt{5}}
\end{array}\right) \\
& \approx\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
g_{\mathbf{1}}+g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & -1.75890 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}-0.706914 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & 12.3261 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{1}}}+0.47048 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} \\
* & 15.1275 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{1}}}+1.84736 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} & g_{\mathbf{1}}+0.5 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+0.5 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}} \\
* & * & 2.81677 g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+0.818275 g_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.48}
\end{align*}
$$

where once again $g_{1}, g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}$ and $g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}$ were redefined to include the factors coming from the modular forms $Y_{1}^{\nu}, Y_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}^{\nu}$ and $Y_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}^{\nu}$.

When we apply the golden ratio mixing matrix Eq.(4.18) to the neutrino mass matrix for triplets $3^{\prime}$ we obtain:

$$
U_{G R}^{T} M_{\nu}^{3^{\prime}} U_{G R}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a & 0 & c  \tag{4.49}\\
0 & \frac{1}{10}((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c) & 0 \\
c & 0 & b
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $a=g_{\mathbf{1}}-\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+\frac{39 \sqrt{5}-85}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}, b=-g_{\mathbf{1}}+(5+2 \sqrt{5}) g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+(12 \sqrt{5}-25) g_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}$ and $c=-(5+3 \sqrt{5}) g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}$ $-\frac{3}{2}(7 \sqrt{5}-15) g_{5_{2}}$. This matrix has only an element on the second row and second column and four elements on the corners that form a $2 \times 2$ symmetric matrix and so it can be fully diagonalized by introducing a matrix $U_{r}$ that describes a rotation among the first and third columns. The matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is then $U=U_{G R} U_{r}$, where $U_{r}$ is given by Eq.(4.19). We are then able to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$ and the lepton mixing obeys a $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing.

It is also possible to start from the diagonal matrix $M_{\nu_{d}}$ and get $U_{G R}^{T} M_{\nu} U_{G R}$. We have that:

$$
U_{r}^{*} M_{\nu_{d}} U_{r}^{\dagger}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
m_{1} e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta+m_{3} e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta & 0 & \frac{1}{2}\left(-m_{1} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}+m_{3} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\right) \sin 2 \theta  \tag{4.50}\\
0 & m_{2} e^{-2 i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
* & 0 & m_{1} e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+m_{3} e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta
\end{array}\right)
$$

and comparing with (4.49) we obtain that $\alpha_{3}=-\frac{1}{2} \arg ((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c)$ and, more importantly, we get a mass sum rule for $m_{i}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& m_{2}=\left|\frac{1}{10}((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c)\right| \\
& \left.=\frac{1}{10} \right\rvert\, m_{1}\left((5-\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5+\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+4 \sqrt{5} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right)-  \tag{4.51}\\
& \quad-m_{3}\left((5+\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5-\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+4 \sqrt{5} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) \mid .
\end{align*}
$$

The sum rule (4.51) and (4.20-4.23) give us relations between the observables and the parameters of the $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing, and hence we can do a numerical minimisation using the $\chi^{2}$ function:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi^{2}=\sum_{i}\left(\frac{P_{i}(\{x\})-B F_{i}}{\sigma_{i}}\right)^{2} \tag{4.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{i}$ are the values provided by the considered model, $B F$ the best fit value from NuFit [59] and $\sigma_{i}$ is also provided by NuFit, when averaging the upper and lower $\sigma$ provided. For the fitting, the three mixing angles, the atmospheric and solar neutrino squared mass differences and the Dirac neutrino CP violation phase were considered.

The fit parameters obtained for normal ordering (NO) and inverted ordering (IO) of neutrino masses can be found in Table 4.4. The best fit values lie inside the $1 \sigma$ range for all the observables except $\theta_{12}$, for both orderings near the lower limit of the $1 \sigma$ range, and $\theta_{23}$ for IO. Nonetheless, all the observables are within their $3 \sigma$ intervals. The best-fit occurs for NO with a $\chi^{2} / 6=0.55$.

| NO | Para. |  | $\chi^{2 / 6}$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  | 0.55 | -10.09 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -12.97 ${ }^{\circ}$ | $24.16{ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0372 eV | 0.0624 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{31}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $32.12^{\circ}$ | $49.3{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.57^{\circ}$ | $218{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $2.514 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0276 eV |
| 10 | Para. |  | $\chi^{2 / 6}$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
|  |  |  | 1.80 | $10.16^{\circ}$ | -24.53 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -130.52 ${ }^{\circ}$ | 0.1209 eV | 0.1104 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $32.12^{\circ}$ | $46.5^{\circ}$ | $8.63{ }^{\circ}$ | $254{ }^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $-2.497 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.1091 eV |

Table 4.4: Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$.


Figure 4.1: Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ Vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the Weinberg operator and two modular $A_{5}$. For NO, the points having $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ were plotted in dark-red. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1.

It is also possible to obtain the expected $m_{\beta \beta}$ for neutrinoless beta decay using the formula

$$
\begin{align*}
m_{\beta \beta} & =\left|\left(M_{\nu}\right)_{(1,1)}\right| \\
& =\left|\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{10} m_{1} e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta+\frac{2 m_{2} e^{-2 i \alpha_{3}}}{5+\sqrt{5}}+\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{10} m_{3} e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta\right|, \tag{4.53}
\end{align*}
$$

where $m_{2}$ is given by Eq.(4.51). Doing a numerical computation, the allowed regions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ of Figure 4.1 (for NO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{1}$ and for IO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{3}$ ) were obtained, using again as constraints the data from [59]. The experimental constrains that were already discussed in Section 3.3, and arise from experimental results provided by KamLAND-Zen [64] and PLANCK 2018 [65]), are also included. We conclude then that both fits in Table 4.4 are in the disfavoured region.

For NO, the points that have $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ were plotted with a darker red colour. Only for normal mass orderings do we have points outside the disfavoured region. The minimum values considering the $3 \sigma$ ranges are

$$
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.015 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.008 \mathrm{eV}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{10} \approx 0.025 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{10} \approx 0.052 \mathrm{eV}, \tag{4.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the minimum values for the points that have $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.017 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.009 \mathrm{eV} \tag{4.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking these considerations into account, we conclude that NO is once again the preferred mass ordering.

### 4.4 Models with two modular $A_{5}$ symmetries - using the see-saw mechanism

In this section it is assumed that neutrinos get their mass through the type I see-saw mechanism, the effective term from the superpotential that gives rise to a Dirac mass matrix being of the form $\frac{1}{\Lambda} L Y^{\nu} \nu^{c} H_{u}$. Again, at high energies this model is based in two modular symmetries, $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with modulus fields denoted by $\tau_{l}$ and $\tau_{\nu}$, that will acquire different VEV's, leading to a $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing.

We will assume that the Yukawa coupling $Y^{\nu}$ is simply a constant. The transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for this model are shown in Table 4.5.

| Fields | $S U(2)$ | $A_{5}^{l}$ | $A_{5}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $L$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | -2 |
| $E^{c}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | +2 |
| $\nu^{c}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ | 0 | +2 |
| $H_{u, d}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $\Phi$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ | 0 | 0 |


| Yukawas/Masses | $A_{5}^{l}$ | $A_{5}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{l}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | 0 |
| $Y_{\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}}^{l}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{\left({ }^{\prime}\right)}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | 0 |
| $Y_{\mathbf{5}}^{l}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | +4 | 0 |
| $Y^{\nu}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $M_{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $M_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | 0 | +4 |
| $M_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | 0 | +4 |

Table 4.5: Transformation properties of fields, Yukawa couplings and masses for the right-handed neutrinos for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$.

The Yukawa coefficients for the charged leptons are a modular form which transforms as a triplet $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ of $A_{5}^{l}$ with weight $2 k_{l}=+4$, whereas $Y^{\nu}$ is simply a modulus independent constant, a modular form of weight 0 . For the right-handed neutrino masses we consider three modular forms transforming under $A_{5}^{\nu}: M_{1}$ as a singlet, and $M_{5_{1}}$ and $M_{5_{2}}$ as two quintuplets, all with weights $2 k_{\nu}=+4$. The weights were chosen in such a way that the modular forms acquire the desired directions as we show below.

The right-handed charged leptons are arranged in a triplet $\mathbf{3}^{(/)}$of $A_{5}^{l}$ and trivial singlet 1 of $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=+4$ and $2 k_{\nu}=+2$. The lepton doublets $L$ are arranged as a triplet $\mathbf{3}^{(/)}$of $A_{5}^{l}$ and a singlet of $A_{5}^{\nu}$, with weights $2 k_{l}=0$ and $2 k_{\nu}=-2$. In this model, the three right-handed neutrinos that were introduced also form a triplet $\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}$ of $A_{5}^{\nu}$ with weight $2 k_{\nu}=+2$. These are the correct choices for the weights such that the modular forms and fields in each term sum up to zero since the weight for the fields is not $+2 k$, which are the values that were introduced in this section, but $-2 k$ instead.

Note once again that, in spite of the charged leptons only having non-trivial singlet transformations under $A_{5}^{l}$ and the right-handed neutrinos only under $A_{5}^{\nu}$ (which justifies the nomenclature used), the respective weights introduce non-trivial factors in the transformations under both modular symmetries for these fields.

With the fields assigned in this manner, the superpotential for this model, which can be separated into one part containing the mass terms for the charged leptons and the other the neutrino mass terms, has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
w & =w_{e}+w_{\nu}  \tag{4.56}\\
w_{e} & =\left(\alpha_{1} Y_{\mathbf{1}}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\alpha_{2} Y_{\left.\mathbf{3}^{\prime \prime}\right)}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{(\prime)}}+\alpha_{3} Y_{\mathbf{5}}^{l}\left(\tau_{l}\right)\left(L E^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}\right) H_{d}  \tag{4.57}\\
w_{\nu} & =\frac{Y^{\nu}}{\Lambda} L \Phi \nu^{c} H_{u}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2}\left(M_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+M_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \tag{4.58}
\end{align*}
$$

From this superpotential, we can obtain the mass matrix for the right-handed neutrinos. As for the models discussed in the previous section, using he Weinberg operator, we expand the weight 4 triplets $M_{5_{1}}$ and $M_{5_{\mathbf{2}}}$ in terms of the weight 2 modular functions $Y_{1}, Y_{8}$. If $\rho_{L} \sim \mathbf{3}^{\prime}$, the mass matrix for the right-handed neutrinos after the Higgs field acquires the VEV $\left\langle H_{u}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{u}\right)$ gets the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{R}^{3^{\prime}} & =c_{\mathbf{1}}\left(Y_{1}^{2}+2 Y_{3} Y_{4}+2 Y_{2} Y_{5}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \\
& +c_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{5} Y_{7}-Y_{2} Y_{8} & -Y_{4} Y_{6}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{5} Y_{8} & Y_{3} Y_{6}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{7} \\
* & -Y_{3} Y_{8}-\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{6}-\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{7} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{5} Y_{7}+\frac{1}{2} Y_{2} Y_{8} \\
* & * & Y_{4} Y_{7}+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{5} Y_{6}+\sqrt{\frac{3}{2}} Y_{1} Y_{8}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +c_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
Y_{1}^{2}+Y_{3} Y_{4}-2 Y_{2} Y_{5} & -\frac{3}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{2} Y_{3}-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{4} & -\frac{3}{\sqrt{2}} Y_{4} Y_{5}-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} Y_{1} Y_{3} \\
* & \frac{3}{2} Y_{4}^{2}-\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{2} & -\frac{1}{2} Y_{1}^{2}-\frac{1}{2} Y_{3} Y_{4}+Y_{2} Y_{5} \\
* & * & \frac{3}{2} Y_{3}^{2}-\sqrt{6} Y_{1} Y_{5}
\end{array}\right) . \tag{4.59}
\end{align*}
$$

where asterisks were used to omit the off diagonal entries of symmetric matrices and where $c_{1}, c_{5_{1}}$ and $c_{5_{2}}$ are arbitrary complex constants associated with the respective modular form contribution. We have redefined the constants associated with the quintuplets in order to have simpler factors for the first column first row entry in the matrix above. This matrix $M_{R}^{3^{\prime}}$ has the same structure as $M_{\nu}^{3^{\prime}}$ for the models using the Weinberg operator instead, and the same is also valid for $M_{R}^{3}$ and $M_{\nu}^{3}$.

$$
A_{5}^{l} \times A_{5}^{\nu} \rightarrow A_{5}^{D} \text { breaking }
$$

Considering the multiplication rules for two triplets to get a trivial singlet, the term $\frac{Y^{\nu}}{\Lambda} L \Phi \nu^{c} H_{u}$ can be explicitly expanded as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{Y^{\nu}}{\Lambda} L^{T} P_{23} \Phi P_{23} \nu^{c} H_{u}^{2} \tag{4.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the superscript $T$ as usual stands for the transpose of a vector and $P_{23}$ is the matrix that describes the permutation of the second and third columns or rows:

$$
P_{23}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0  \tag{4.61}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

If $\Phi$ acquires the $\mathrm{VEV}\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} P_{23}$ (see Appendix B. 4 for more details), the term in Eq.(4.60)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{Y^{\nu} v_{\Phi}}{\Lambda} L^{T} P_{23} \nu^{c} H_{u} \tag{4.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is precisely the contraction rule from two triplets 3 or two triplets $3^{\prime}$ to a singlet. This implies that $w_{\nu}$ gets the form (the $w_{e}$ terms remain exactly the same):

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{\nu}=y_{D}\left(L \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} H_{u}+\frac{1}{2} M_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{1}}+\frac{1}{2}\left(M_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)+M_{\mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}\left(\tau_{\nu}\right)\right)\left(\nu^{c} \nu^{c}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \tag{4.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y_{D}=Y^{\nu} v_{\Phi} / \Lambda$. This means that the symmetry $A_{5}^{l} \times A_{5}^{\nu}$ is broken but given that the same transformation $\gamma$ can be performed in $A_{5}^{l}$ and $A_{5}^{\nu}$ simultaneously and being the term in the superpotential above left invariant by such a transformation, the diagonal subgroup $A_{5}^{D}$ is conserved.

## $A_{5}^{D}$ breaking

The flavour structure after $A_{5}^{D}$ symmetry breaking now follows. As for the models using the Weinberg operator, we assume that the charged lepton modular field $\tau_{l}$ acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{l}\right\rangle=\tau_{T}=i \infty$, which is a stabiliser of $T_{\tau}$ and thus a residual modular $Z_{5}^{T}$ symmetry is preserved in the charged lepton sector. The directions the modular forms take at this stabiliser are in Table 4.2 and lead to an almost diagonal charged lepton mass matrix as in Eq.(4.45). The masses for the charged leptons can be reproduced by adjusting the parameters $\alpha_{i}$ and the mass matrix for the charged leptons can be diagonalized by multiplying on the left by the identity matrix and on the right by $P_{23}$ and thus the PMNS matrix is simply the matrix that diagonalizes the mass matrix for the neutrinos.

For the other modular field $\tau_{\nu}$, we want to find a VEV that leads to a mixing that preserves the second column of the golden ratio GR mixing matrix. Again, this occurs for $\rho_{L} \sim 3^{\prime}$, when the modular field acquires the $\operatorname{VEV}\left\langle\tau_{\nu}\right\rangle=\tau_{S}=i$ and $k_{\nu}$ is even (the simplest case is $2 k_{\nu}=+4$ ). In this case, a residual modular $Z_{2}^{S}$ symmetry is preserved in the neutrino sector (see Table 4.2 for the directions at this stabiliser). This implies the following structure for the neutrino mass matrix for the right-handed neutrinos:

$$
M_{R}^{3^{\prime}}=c_{\mathbf{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +c_{5_{1}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\sqrt{\frac{79}{2}+17 \sqrt{5}-\sqrt{2770+1238 \sqrt{5}}} & \sqrt{\frac{79}{2}+17 \sqrt{5}+\sqrt{2770+1238 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & \frac{9}{2}+2 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{5+2 \sqrt{5}} & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & \frac{9}{2}+2 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{5+2 \sqrt{5}}
\end{array}\right) \\
& +c_{5_{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & -\frac{3}{2} \sqrt{387-173 \sqrt{5}+2 \sqrt{41810-18698 \sqrt{5}}} & \frac{3}{2} \sqrt{387-173 \sqrt{5}-2 \sqrt{41810-18698 \sqrt{5}}} \\
* & -\frac{51}{2}+12 \sqrt{5}+3 \sqrt{85-38 \sqrt{5}} & -\frac{1}{2} \\
* & * & -\frac{51}{2}+12 \sqrt{5}-3 \sqrt{85-38 \sqrt{5}}
\end{array}\right) \\
& \approx\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
c_{1}+c_{5_{1}}+g_{5_{2}} & -1.75890 c_{5_{1}}-0.706914 c_{5_{2}} & 12.3261 c_{\mathbf{c}_{1}}+0.47048 c_{5_{2}} \\
* & 15.1275 c_{5_{1}}+1.84736 c_{5_{2}} & c_{1}+0.5 c_{5_{1}}+0.5 c_{5_{2}} \\
* & * & 2.81677 c_{5_{1}}+0.818275 c_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}
\end{array}\right) \tag{4.64}
\end{align*}
$$

where $c_{1}, c_{5_{1}}$ and $c_{5_{2}}$ were redefined to include the factors coming from the modular forms $M_{1}, M_{5_{1}}$ and $M_{5_{2}}$.

For this model the VEV the field $\tau_{\nu}$ acquires has no implication on the term that generates the Dirac mass matrix that relates the right-handed and active neutrinos. This matrix after the Higgs field $H_{u}$ acquires a VEV $\left\langle H_{u}\right\rangle=\left(0, v_{u}\right)$ is simply

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{D}=y_{D} v_{u} P_{23} \tag{4.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently, the active neutrino mass matrix for the see-saw mechanism gets the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{\nu}=-M_{D} M_{R}^{-1} M_{D}^{T}=-y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2} P_{23} M_{R}^{-1} P_{23} . \tag{4.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

We want now to diagonalize $M_{\nu}$, such that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=M_{\nu_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(m_{1}, m_{2}, m_{3}\right)$, where $m_{i}$ are the neutrino masses and $U$ is an unitary matrix. As derived in Section 3.4.2, it is also true that $U^{T} M_{\nu} U=-U^{T} M_{D} M_{R}^{-1} M_{D}^{T} U=M_{\nu_{d}}$. So $M_{D}^{T} U$ also diagonalizes the matrix $M_{R}^{-1}$ and thus $V=M_{D}^{\dagger} U^{*}$ diagonalizes $M_{R}$ such that $V^{T} M_{R} V=M_{R_{d}}=\operatorname{diag}\left(M_{1}, M_{2}, M_{3}\right)$ where $M_{i}=-\frac{y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2}}{m_{i}}$. Conversely, $U=M_{D}^{*} V^{*}$ when $V$ diagonalizes $M_{R}$.

In the present model, when we apply the golden ratio matrix in Eq.(4.18) to the heavy neutrino mass matrix, we obtain:

$$
U_{G R}^{T} M_{R} U_{G R}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a & 0 & c  \tag{4.67}\\
0 & \frac{1}{10}((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c) & 0 \\
c & 0 & b
\end{array}\right),
$$

where where $a=g_{1}-\frac{5+\sqrt{5}}{2} g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+\frac{39 \sqrt{5}-85}{2} g_{5_{\mathbf{2}}}, b=-g_{\mathbf{1}}+(5+2 \sqrt{5}) g_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}+(12 \sqrt{5}-25) g_{5_{2}}$ and $c=$ $-(5+3 \sqrt{5}) g_{5_{1}}-\frac{3}{2}(7 \sqrt{5}-15) g_{5_{2}}$. This matrix can be fully diagonalized adding a matrix $V_{r}$ that introduces a rotation among the first and third columns. This rotation preserves the second column so $M_{R}$ is diagonalized by a matrix that has the second column of the GR mixing matrix. For the present model, $M_{D}$ is only a permutation, so we have that, being $V=U_{G R} V_{r}$ the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{R}$, the matrix that diagonalizes $M_{\nu}$ is $U=P_{23} U_{G R} V_{r}$, which can also be written as $U_{G R} U_{r}$, where $U_{r}$ is a rotation between the first and third columns. If we define $U_{r}$ as in Eq.(4.19), the definition for the matrix
$V_{r}$ is going to be

$$
V_{r}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\cos \theta e^{-i \alpha_{1}} & 0 & \sin \theta e^{i \alpha_{2}}  \tag{4.68}\\
0 & e^{-i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
\sin \theta e^{-i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & -\cos \theta e^{i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\theta$ is the angle that governs the rotation and the three $\alpha_{i}$ are introduced such that $M_{i}$, and $m_{i}$ too, are purely real values. We are then able to diagonalize both $M_{\nu}$ and $M_{R}$.

It is also possible to start from the diagonal matrix $M_{R_{d}}$ and get $U_{G R}^{T} M_{R} U_{G R}$. We have that

$$
V_{r}^{*} M_{R_{d}} V_{r}^{\dagger}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
M_{1} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{1}}+M_{3} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} & 0 & \frac{1}{2}\left(M_{1} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}-M_{3} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)}\right) \sin 2 \theta  \tag{4.69}\\
0 & M_{2} e^{2 i \alpha_{3}} & 0 \\
* & 0 & M_{1} \sin ^{2} \theta e^{2 i \alpha_{2}}+M_{3} \cos ^{2} \theta e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and comparing with Eq.(4.67) we obtain that $\alpha_{3}=\frac{1}{2} \arg \left(\frac{1}{10}((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c)\right)$ and, more importantly, we get a mass sum rule for $M_{i}$ that can also be expressed in terms of the active neutrino masses $m_{i}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{m_{2}}= & -\frac{1}{y_{D}^{2} v_{u}^{2}}\left|\frac{1}{10}((5-\sqrt{5}) a-(5+\sqrt{5}) b-8 \sqrt{5} c)\right| \\
= & \frac{1}{10} \left\lvert\, \frac{1}{m_{1}}\left((5-\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5+\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-4 \sqrt{5} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right)-\right.  \tag{4.70}\\
& \left.\quad-\frac{1}{m_{3}}\left((5+\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5-\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta-4 \sqrt{5} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) \right\rvert\,
\end{align*}
$$

For the models constructed in the previous chapter with two $A_{4}$ modular symmetries, we found that the model using the Weinberg operator and the first model using the see-saw mechanism could be expressed in a simpler sum rule. This occurred because the matrices $M_{\nu}$ using the Weinberg operator and $M_{R}$ using the see-saw mechanism had the same structure. Since the same is valid for the models constructed in this chapter with two $A_{5}$ modular symmetries, we can easily see that the sum rule can be expressed similarly as in [55] as

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{2}^{\eta}=f_{1}\left(\eta \theta, \eta \alpha_{1}, \eta \alpha_{2}, \eta \alpha_{3}\right) m_{1}^{\eta}+f_{3}\left(\eta \theta, \eta \alpha_{1}, \eta \alpha_{2}, \eta \alpha_{3}\right) m_{3}^{\eta} \tag{4.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right)=\frac{1}{10}\left((5-\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5+\sqrt{5}) e^{-2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+4 \sqrt{5} e^{-i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) e^{2 i \alpha_{3}}  \tag{4.72}\\
& f_{3}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right)=-\frac{1}{10}\left((5+\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{1}} \cos ^{2} \theta-(5-\sqrt{5}) e^{2 i \alpha_{2}} \sin ^{2} \theta+4 \sqrt{5} e^{i\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right)} \sin 2 \theta\right) e^{2 i \alpha_{3}} \tag{4.73}
\end{align*}
$$

With these definitions, for the model using the Weinberg operator to generate the neutrino masses, we choose for the exponent $\eta=+1$ and thus:

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{2}=f_{1}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right) m_{1}+f_{3}\left(\theta, \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{3}\right) m_{3} . \tag{4.74}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we recover Eq.(4.51). For the model using the see-saw mechanism, we chose $\eta=-1$ for the exponent, and since there is that difference between in $U_{r}$ and $V_{r}$ already discussed in Section 3.4.2, in this case we will also have to exchange all the signs of the angles and complex phases. We will have then for the model using the see-saw mechanism:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{m_{2}}=f_{1}\left(-\theta,-\alpha_{1},-\alpha_{2},-\alpha_{3}\right) \frac{1}{m_{1}}+f_{3}\left(-\theta,-\alpha_{1},-\alpha_{2},-\alpha_{3}\right) \frac{1}{m_{3}} \tag{4.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

which recovers Eq.(4.70).
Before considering how well experimental results agree with these models, we stop here to consider briefly the case $\rho_{L} \sim 3$ for the present model using the see-saw mechanism. We would obtain for $M_{R}$ the same structure as $M_{\nu}$ in the previous model, which was diagonalized by the GR mixing matrix times a rotation among the second and third columns. This implies that, for the simple model using the seesaw mechanism we are now considering, where $M_{D}$ is simply a permutation, the mixing obtained for $\rho_{L} \sim 3$ using the see-saw mechanism will also be $\mathrm{GR}_{1}$, which, as stated in Section 4.2 , is incompatible with the experimental $3 \sigma$ confidence interval for $\theta_{12}$. For this reason, we will not develop more the case $\rho_{L} \sim 3$.

We turn now to the agreement between the model using $\rho_{L} \sim 3^{\prime}$ and experiment. We can use the sum rule Eq.(4.70) and Eqs.(4.20-4.23), which are relations between the observables and the parameters of the $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing, to do a numerical minimisation using the $\chi^{2}$ function, Eq.(4.52). For the fitting, the three mixing angles, the atmospheric and solar neutrino squared mass differences and the Dirac neutrino CP violation phase were considered.

The fit parameters obtained for NO and IO of neutrino masses can be found in Table 4.6. For NO, the best fit values lie inside the $1 \sigma$ range for all the observables except $\theta_{12}$, for both orderings near the lower limit of the $1 \sigma$ range. For IO, $\theta_{23}$ and $\delta$ also lie outside the $1 \sigma$ confidence intervals. Nonetheless, all the observables are within their $3 \sigma$ intervals. The best-fit occurs for normal ordering of neutrino masses with a $\chi^{2} / 6=0.55$.

It is also possible to obtain the expected $m_{\beta \beta}$ for neutrinoless beta decay using Eq.(4.53), but now using Eq.(4.70) for $m_{2}$. Doing a numerical computation, the allowed regions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ of Figure 4.2 (for NO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{1}$ and for IO, $m_{\text {lightest }}=m_{3}$ ) were obtained, using again as constraints the data from [59]. The experimental constrains that were already discussed in Section 3.3 are also included.

| NO | Para. |  | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  | 0.55 | -10.09 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -102.67 ${ }^{\circ}$ | -68.40 ${ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0045 eV | 0.0503 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{31}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $32.12^{\circ}$ | $49.4{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.57^{\circ}$ | $215^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $2.514 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0068 eV |
| 10 | Para. |  | $\chi^{2} / 6$ | $\theta$ | $\alpha_{1}$ | $\alpha_{2}$ | $m_{1}$ | $m_{3}$ |
|  |  |  | 1.58 | $10.14{ }^{\circ}$ | -181.33 ${ }^{\circ}$ | $68.58{ }^{\circ}$ | 0.0687 eV | 0.0480 eV |
|  | Obs. | $\theta_{12}$ | $\theta_{23}$ | $\theta_{13}$ | $\delta$ | $\Delta m_{21}^{2}$ | $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ | $m_{\beta \beta}$ |
|  |  | $32.12^{\circ}$ | $46.8{ }^{\circ}$ | $8.61^{\circ}$ | $250^{\circ}$ | $7.42 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | $-2.497 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ | 0.0335 eV |

Table 4.6: Parameters (Para.) and observables (Obs.) for the best fit point for normal and inverted orderings for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$.


Figure 4.2: Predictions of $m_{\text {lightest }}$ vs $m_{\beta \beta}$ for both orderings of neutrino masses compatible with $3 \sigma$ data from [59] for model using the see-saw mechanism and two modular $A_{5}$. For NO, the points with $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ were plotted in dark-red. In both figures were also included the current upper limit from KamLAND-Zen and PLANCK 2018 as in Figure 3.1.

We conclude then that only the fit for NO in Table 4.6 is outside the disfavoured region.
For NO, the points that are compatible with the $1 \sigma$ ranges of the observables other than $\theta_{12}$ (which is, as already said, always near the lower $1 \sigma$ limit although outside), which are inside a larger group containing the points that have $\chi^{2} / 6<1$. These points were plotted with a darker red colour. For IO, at least one of the other observables is outside its $1 \sigma$ region, hence only the $3 \sigma$ compatible region is plotted for IO. As happened for the model using the Weinberg operator, only for normal ordering do we have points outside the disfavoured region. The minimum values considering the $3 \sigma$ ranges are

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.0004 \mathrm{eV} & \left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.0008 \mathrm{eV} \\
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{IO}} \approx 0.019 \mathrm{eV} & \left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{IO}} \approx 0.023 \mathrm{eV} \tag{4.76}
\end{array}
$$

and the minimum values for the points that have $\chi^{2} / 6<1$ are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(m_{\text {lightest }}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.004 \mathrm{eV} \quad\left(m_{\beta \beta}\right)_{\min }^{\mathrm{NO}} \approx 0.005 \mathrm{eV} . \tag{4.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

We conclude that, when using the see-saw mechanism, NO is once again the preferred mass ordering, although, when comparing the present model with the model using the Weinberg operator discussed in Section 4.3 the $m_{\beta \beta}$ vs $m_{\text {lightest }}$ region extends to lower orders of magnitude.

## Chapter 5

## Conclusions

In this work, we employed the framework of multiple modular symmetries to build models with minimal field content that are able to reproduce viable mixings. For the models using two $A_{4}$ modular symmetries, the tri-maximal 2 mixing was obtained, and, for the models using two $A_{5}$ modular symmetries, a variation of the golden ratio mixing where only the second column is preserved, which was called $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$, was obtained instead.

We described how the multiple $A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ modular symmetries can be broken to a single symmetry group and showed possible assignments of fields and weights under these two modular symmetries leading to the desired mixing scheme. Three explicit models for $A_{4}$ and two for $A_{5}$ were built (with different weights and using the Weinberg operator or the seesaw mechanism to generate the neutrino masses) and shown to be predictive and to reproduce the observed mixing angles and mass differences with good fits.

Neutrinoless double beta decay is expected, with the inverted ordering possibility almost entirely disfavoured by cosmological observations and less compatible with the $1 \sigma$ best fit intervals for the experimental observables than the normal ordering of neutrino masses. This occurs for all the models, independent of the mechanism that generates the masses. Furthermore, the $\chi^{2}$ values obtained for all the models, which depended mainly on the $\sin ^{2} \theta_{12}$ deviation from the best fit point, favour the $\mathrm{GR}_{2}$ mixing scheme more than the $\mathrm{TM}_{2}$ mixing.

It should be noted that this work is possible to be continued and will be continued. First of all, in October 2021, new results from NuFit were published at http://www.nu-fit.org/ which seems to mean that the connection between our results and the results from this global fit needs to be updated. The results differ more significantly from the July 2020 data in the best fit points for $\sin ^{2} \theta_{23}$ and $\sin ^{2} \theta_{13}$, and also on their $3 \sigma$ range, but these are still not much significant differences. Thus, we expect that no noticeable changes seem to apply. Nevertheless, it would be a good idea to update the analysis considering these more recent confidence intervals, which can be easily done.

Secondly, for the bi-quintuplet $\Phi$ for the models using $A_{5}$, the vacuum alignments are still being studied and should be improved in the near future. All the solutions were not obtained fully for the alignment of the bi-quintuplet, and for the bi-triplet, no equations that can be fully solved were obtained
so far. We conclude that more driving fields of different nature need to be added to the present model to account for the $\Phi$ VEV when using $A_{5}$.

In conclusion, the models shown in this dissertation maintain their valid results and prove to be in agreement with experiment, and so, despite the present incompleteness of the $A_{5}$ alignments in its present version, this thesis is a useful addendum to the field of modular field symmetries.

## Bibliography

[1] Sheldon L. Glashow. "Partial-symmetries of weak interactions". In: Nuclear Physics 22.4 (1961), pp. 579-588. ISSN: 0029-5582. DOI: https://doi .org/10.1016/0029-5582(61) 90469-2. URL: https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/0029558261904692.
[2] Steven Weinberg. "A Model of Leptons". In: Phys. Rev. Lett. 19.21 (Nov. 1967), pp. 1264-1266. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.19.1264. URL: https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett. 19.1264.
[3] Matthew D. Schwartz. Quantum Field Theory and the Standard Model. Cambridge University Press, 2013. DOI: 10.1017/9781139540940.
[4] Serguei Chatrchyan et al. "Observation of a New Boson at a Mass of 125 GeV with the CMS Experiment at the LHC". In: Phys. Lett. B 716 (2012), pp. 30-61. DOI: 10.1016 /j . physletb . 2012.08.021. arXiv: 1207.7235 [hep-ex].
[5] Georges Aad et al. "Observation of a new particle in the search for the Standard Model Higgs boson with the ATLAS detector at the LHC". In: Phys. Lett. B 716 (2012), pp. 1-29. DOI: 10.1016/ j.physletb.2012.08.020. arXiv: 1207.7214 [hep-ex].
[6] Stephen F. King and Ye-Ling Zhou. "Trimaximal TM ${ }_{1}$ mixing with two modular $S_{4}$ groups". In: Phys. Rev. D 101.1 (2020), p. 015001. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.101.015001. arXiv: 1908.02770 [hep-ph].
[7] Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas, Stephen F. King, and Ye-Ling Zhou. "Multiple modular symmetries as the origin of flavor". In: Phys. Rev. D 101.5 (2020), p. 055033. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD . 101. 055033. arXiv: 1906.02208 [hep-ph].
[8] Carl H. Albright, Alexander Dueck, and Werner Rodejohann. "Possible Alternatives to Tri-bimaximal Mixing". In: Eur. Phys. J. C 70 (2010), pp. 1099-1110. DOI: 10.1140/epjc/s10052-010-1492-2. arXiv: 1004.2798 [hep-ph].
[9] Steven Weinberg. The Quantum Theory of Fields. Vol. 1. Cambridge University Press, 1995. Dol: 10.1017/CB09781139644167.
[10] Steven Weinberg. The Quantum Theory of Fields. Vol. 2. Cambridge University Press, 1996. DoI: 10.1017/CB09781139644174.
[11] P. Ramond. "Dual Theory for Free Fermions". In: Phys. Rev. D 3.10 (June 1971), pp. 2415-2418. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.3.2415. URL: https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevD.3.2415.
[12] A. Neveu and J.H. Schwarz. "Factorizable dual model of pions". In: Nuclear Physics B 31.1 (1971), pp. 86-112. ISSN: 0550-3213. DOI: https://doi.org/10.1016/0550-3213(71) 90448-2. URL: https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/0550321371904482.
[13] J. Wess and B. Zumino. "Supergauge transformations in four dimensions". In: Nuclear Physics B 70.1 (1974), pp. 39-50. ISSN: 0550-3213. DOI: https : / / doi . org/10. 1016/0550-3213(74) 90355-1. URL: https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/0550321374903551.
[14] Steven Weinberg. The Quantum Theory of Fields. Vol. 3. Cambridge University Press, 2000. DOI: 10.1017/CB09781139644198.
[15] Stephen P. Martin. "A Supersymmetry primer". In: Adv. Ser. Direct. High Energy Phys. 18 (1998). Ed. by Gordon L. Kane, pp. 1-98. DOI: 10.1142/9789812839657_0001. arXiv: hep-ph/9709356.
[16] Tatsuo Kobayashi, Kentaro Tanaka, and Takuya H. Tatsuishi. "Neutrino mixing from finite modular groups". In: Phys. Rev. D 98.1 (2018), p. 016004. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD. 98.016004. arXiv: 1803.10391 [hep-ph].
[17] Tatsuo Kobayashi et al. "Finite modular subgroups for fermion mass matrices and baryon/lepton number violation". In: Phys. Lett. B 794 (2019), pp. 114-121. DOI: 10.1016/j . physletb . 2019 . 05.034. arXiv: 1812.11072 [hep-ph].
[18] Hiroshi Okada and Yuta Orikasa. "Modular $S_{3}$ symmetric radiative seesaw model". In: Phys. Rev. D 100.11 (2019), p. 115037. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.100.115037. arXiv: 1907.04716 [hep-ph].
[19] Subhasmita Mishra. "Neutrino mixing and Leptogenesis with modular $S_{3}$ symmetry in the framework of type III seesaw". In: (Aug. 2020). arXiv: 2008.02095 [hep-ph].
[20] Xiaokang Du and Fei Wang. "SUSY breaking constraints on modular flavor $S_{3}$ invariant SU(5) GUT model". In: JHEP 02 (2021), p. 221. DOI: 10. 1007 / JHEP02 (2021) 221. arXiv: 2012 . 01397 [hep-ph].
[21] Ferruccio Feruglio. "Are neutrino masses modular forms?" In: From My Vast Repertoire ...: Guido Altarelli's Legacy. Ed. by Aharon Levy, Stefano Forte, and Giovanni Ridolfi. 2019. DOI: 10.1142/ 9789813238053_0012. arXiv: 1706. 08749 [hep-ph].
[22] Juan Carlos Criado and Ferruccio Feruglio. "Modular Invariance Faces Precision Neutrino Data". In: SciPost Phys. 5.5 (2018), p. 042. DOI: 10.21468/SciPostPhys . 5. 5. 042. arXiv: 1807.01125 [hep-ph].
[23] Tatsuo Kobayashi et al. "Modular A invariance and neutrino mixing". In: JHEP 11 (2018), p. 196. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP11(2018)196. arXiv: 1808.03012 [hep-ph].
[24] Hiroshi Okada and Morimitsu Tanimoto. "CP violation of quarks in $A_{4}$ modular invariance". In: Phys. Lett. B 791 (2019), pp. 54-61. DOI: 10.1016/j.physletb.2019.02.028. arXiv: 1812.09677 [hep-ph].
[25] P.P. Novichkov, S.T. Petcov, and M. Tanimoto. "Trimaximal Neutrino Mixing from Modular A4 Invariance with Residual Symmetries". In: Phys. Lett. B 793 (2019), pp. 247-258. DOI: 10.1016/j . physletb.2019.04.043. arXiv: 1812.11289 [hep-ph].
[26] Takaaki Nomura and Hiroshi Okada. "A modular $A_{4}$ symmetric model of dark matter and neutrino". In: Phys. Lett. B 797 (2019), p. 134799. DOI: 10.1016/j. physletb. 2019.134799. arXiv: 1904. 03937 [hep-ph].
[27] Takaaki Nomura and Hiroshi Okada. "A two loop induced neutrino mass model with modular $A_{4}$ symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 966 (2021), p. 115372. DOI: 10.1016/j . nuclphysb . 2021 . 115372. arXiv: 1906.03927 [hep-ph].
[28] Gui-Jun Ding, Stephen F. King, and Xiang-Gan Liu. "Modular $\mathrm{A}_{4}$ symmetry models of neutrinos and charged leptons". In: JHEP 09 (2019), p. 074. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP09 (2019) 074. arXiv: 1907. 11714 [hep-ph].
[29] Di Zhang. "A modular $A_{4}$ symmetry realization of two-zero textures of the Majorana neutrino mass matrix". In: Nucl. Phys. B 952 (2020), p. 114935. DOI: 10.1016/j .nuclphysb.2020.114935. arXiv: 1910.07869 [hep-ph].
[30] Hiroshi Okada and Yuta Orikasa. A radiative seesaw model in modular $A_{4}$ symmetry. July 2019. arXiv: 1907.13520 [hep-ph].
[31] Takaaki Nomura, Hiroshi Okada, and Oleg Popov. "A modular $A_{4}$ symmetric scotogenic model". In: Phys. Lett. B 803 (2020), p. 135294. DOI: 10.1016/j.physletb. 2020.135294. arXiv: 1908.07457 [hep-ph].
[32] Takehiko Asaka et al. "Modular $A_{4}$ invariance and leptogenesis". In: JHEP 01 (2020), p. 144. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP01 (2020) 144. arXiv: 1909.06520 [hep-ph].
[33] Takaaki Nomura, Hiroshi Okada, and Sudhanwa Patra. "An inverse seesaw model with $A_{4}$ modular symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 967 (2021), p. 115395. DOI: 10.1016/j .nuclphysb. 2021. 115395. arXiv: 1912.00379 [hep-ph].
[34] Tatsuo Kobayashi, Takaaki Nomura, and Takashi Shimomura. "Type II seesaw models with modular $A_{4}$ symmetry". In: Phys. Rev. D 102.3 (2020), p. 035019. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.102.035019. arXiv: 1912.00637 [hep-ph].
[35] Xin Wang. "Lepton flavor mixing and CP violation in the minimal type-(I+II) seesaw model with a modular $A_{4}$ symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 957 (2020), p. 115105. DOI: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb. 2020.115105. arXiv: 1912.13284 [hep-ph].
[36] Hiroshi Okada and Yutaro Shoji. "A radiative seesaw model with three Higgs doublets in modular $A_{4}$ symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 961 (2020), p. 115216. DOI: 10.1016/j .nuclphysb.2020. 115216. arXiv: 2003.13219 [hep-ph].
[37] Gui-Jun Ding and Ferruccio Feruglio. "Testing Moduli and Flavon Dynamics with Neutrino Oscillations". In: JHEP 06 (2020), p. 134. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP06(2020) 134. arXiv: 2003.13448 [hep-ph].
[38] Mitesh Kumar Behera et al. Implications of $A_{4}$ modular symmetry on Neutrino mass, Mixing and Leptogenesis with Linear Seesaw. July 2020. arXiv: 2007.00545 [hep-ph].
[39] Takaaki Nomura and Hiroshi Okada. A linear seesaw model with $A_{4}$-modular flavor and local $U(1)_{B-L}$ symmetries. July 2020. arXiv: 2007.04801 [hep-ph].
[40] Takaaki Nomura and Hiroshi Okada. Modular $A_{4}$ symmetric inverse seesaw model with $S U(2)_{L}$ multiplet fields. July 2020. arXiv: 2007.15459 [hep-ph].
[41] Mitesh Kumar Behera et al. A modular $A_{4}$ symmetric Scotogenic model for Neutrino mass and Dark Matter. Sept. 2020. arXiv: 2009.01806 [hep-ph] .
[42] Takehiko Asaka, Yongtae Heo, and Takahiro Yoshida. "Lepton flavor model with modular $A_{4}$ symmetry in large volume limit". In: Phys. Lett. B 811 (2020), p. 135956. DOI: 10.1016/j . physletb. 2020.135956. arXiv: 2009.12120 [hep-ph].
[43] Keiko I. Nagao and Hiroshi Okada. Lepton sector in modular $A_{4}$ and gauged $U(1)_{R}$ symmetry. Oct. 2020. arXiv: 2010.03348 [hep-ph].
[44] Parada T. P. Hutauruk et al. Muon g-2 explanation in a modular $A_{4}$ symmetry. Dec. 2020. arXiv: 2012.11156 [hep-ph].
[45] J. T. Penedo and S. T. Petcov. "Lepton Masses and Mixing from Modular $S_{4}$ Symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 939 (2019), pp. 292-307. DOI: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2018.12.016. arXiv: 1806.11040 [hep-ph].
[46] P. P. Novichkov et al. "Modular S $_{4}$ models of lepton masses and mixing". In: JHEP 04 (2019), p. 005. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP04(2019)005. arXiv: 1811.04933 [hep-ph].
[47] Tatsuo Kobayashi et al. "New $A_{4}$ lepton flavor model from $S_{4}$ modular symmetry". In: JHEP 02 (2020), p. 097. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP02 (2020) 097. arXiv: 1907.09141 [hep-ph].
[48] Hiroshi Okada and Yuta Orikasa. Neutrino mass model with a modular $S_{4}$ symmetry. Aug. 2019. arXiv: 1908.08409 [hep-ph].
[49] Tatsuo Kobayashi et al. " $A_{4}$ lepton flavor model and modulus stabilization from $S_{4}$ modular symmetry". In: Phys. Rev. D 100.11 (2019). [Erratum: Phys.Rev.D 101, 039904 (2020)], p. 115045. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD.100.115045. arXiv: 1909.05139 [hep-ph].
[50] Xin Wang and Shun Zhou. "The minimal seesaw model with a modular $\mathrm{S}_{4}$ symmetry". In: JHEP 05 (2020), p. 017. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP05(2020)017. arXiv: 1910.09473 [hep-ph].
[51] Xin Wang. "Dirac neutrino mass models with a modular $S_{4}$ symmetry". In: Nucl. Phys. B 962 (2021), p. 115247. DOI: 10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2020.115247. arXiv: 2007.05913 [hep-ph].
[52] P. P. Novichkov et al. "Modular $A_{5}$ symmetry for flavour model building". In: JHEP 04 (2019), p. 174. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP04(2019)174. arXiv: 1812.02158 [hep-ph].
[53] Gui-Jun Ding, Stephen F. King, and Xiang-Gan Liu. "Neutrino mass and mixing with $A_{5}$ modular symmetry". In: Phys. Rev. D 100.11 (2019), p. 115005. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevD . 100 . 115005. arXiv: 1903.12588 [hep-ph].
[54] Gui-Jun Ding et al. "Modular Invariant Models of Leptons at Level 7". In: JHEP 08 (2020), p. 164. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP08(2020)164. arXiv: 2004.12662 [hep-ph].
[55] J. Gehrlein and M. Spinrath. "Leptonic Sum Rules from Flavour Models with Modular Symmetries". In: JHEP 03 (2021), p. 177. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP03(2021)177. arXiv: 2012.04131 [hep-ph].
[56] Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas and Luís Lavoura. "Flavour models for $T M_{1}$ lepton mixing". In: J. Phys. G 40 (2013), p. 085002. DOI: 10.1088/0954-3899/40/8/085002. arXiv: 1212.3247 [hep-ph].
[57] P. A. Zyla et al. "Review of Particle Physics". In: PTEP 2020.8 (2020), p. 083C01. DOI: 10.1093/ ptep/ptaa104.
[58] Palash B. Pal. "Dirac, Majorana and Weyl fermions". In: Am. J. Phys. 79 (2011), pp. 485-498. DoI: 10.1119/1.3549729. arXiv: 1006.1718 [hep-ph].
[59] Ivan Esteban et al. "The fate of hints: updated global analysis of three-flavor neutrino oscillations". In: JHEP 09 (2020), p. 178. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP09(2020) 178. arXiv: 2007.14792 [hep-ph].
[60] P. F. de Salas et al. "2020 global reassessment of the neutrino oscillation picture". In: JHEP 02 (2021), p. 071. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP02 (2021) 071. arXiv: 2006.11237 [hep-ph].
[61] Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas and João Lourenço. Two A4 modular symmetries for Tri-Maximal 2 mixing. July 2021. arXiv: 2107.04042 [hep-ph].
[62] Ivo de Medeiros Varzielas, Miguel Levy, and Ye-Ling Zhou. "Symmetries and stabilisers in modular invariant flavour models". In: JHEP 11 (2020), p. 085. DOI: 10 . 1007 / JHEP11 (2020) 085. arXiv: 2008.05329 [hep-ph].
[63] Gui-Jun Ding et al. "Modular $\mathrm{S}_{4}$ and $\mathrm{A}_{4}$ symmetries and their fixed points: new predictive examples of lepton mixing". In: JHEP 12 (2019), p. 030. DOI: 10.1007/JHEP12 (2019) 030. arXiv: 1910.03460 [hep-ph].
[64] A. Gando et al. "Search for Majorana Neutrinos near the Inverted Mass Hierarchy Region with KamLAND-Zen". In: Phys. Rev. Lett. 117.8 (2016). [Addendum: Phys.Rev.Lett. 117, 109903 (2016)], p. 082503. DOI: 10.1103/PhysRevLett.117.082503. arXiv: 1605.02889 [hep-ex].
[65] N. Aghanim et al. "Planck 2018 results. VI. Cosmological parameters". In: Astron. Astrophys. 641 (2020), A6. DOI: 10.1051/0004-6361/201833910. arXiv: 1807.06209 [astro-ph.CO].

## Appendix A

## Modular $A_{4}$ Symmetry Group

## A. $1 A_{4}$ multiplication rules

The group $A_{4}$ is the group of even permutations of four objects and is the symmetry group of the tetrahedron, see e.g. [25]. It has 12 elements and two generators, S and T :

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{2}=(S T)^{3}=T^{3}=1 \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$A_{4}$ has four conjugacy classes: $C_{1}=\{e\}, C_{2}=\{T, S T, T S, S T S\}, C_{3}=\left\{T^{2}, S T^{2}, T^{2} S, T S T\right\}$, $C_{4}=\left\{S, T^{2} S T, T S T^{2}\right\}[21]$.

This group has four irreducible representations: an invariant singlet 1 , two non-invariant singlets $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ and $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$, and a triplet 3. The representations for the generators are in Table A.1. The three dimensional representation is not determined uniquely but up to an unitary transformation, representing a change of basis. Two possible basis are the complex basis, in which $T$ is diagonal, and the real basis, in which $S$ is diagonal.

|  | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime}$ | $\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}$ | 3 - complex basis - $\rho$ | 3-real basis $-\tilde{\rho}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $S$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | $\frac{1}{3}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}-1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & -1\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1\end{array}\right)$ |
| $T$ | 1 | $\omega$ | $\omega^{2}$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \omega & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \omega^{2}\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0\end{array}\right)$ |

Table A.1: Representation for the two generators of $A_{4}$, where $\omega=e^{i 2 \pi / 3}=-1 / 2+i \sqrt{3} / 2$.

To transform from one basis to the other, we use

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\rho}_{\mathbf{3}}(\gamma)=U_{\omega} \rho_{\mathbf{3}}(\gamma) U_{\omega}^{\dagger}, \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the change of basis matrix is

$$
U_{\omega}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 1 & 1  \tag{A.3}\\
1 & \omega^{2} & \omega \\
1 & \omega & \omega^{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

and obeys $U_{\omega}^{\dagger}=U_{\omega} P_{23}$.
The product of two triplets decomposes as $\mathbf{1}+\mathbf{1}^{\prime}+\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}+\mathbf{3}_{S}+\mathbf{3}_{A}$ where $\mathbf{3}_{S(A)}$ denotes the symmetric (antisymmetric) combination. In the complex basis, this decomposition is [25]

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{3} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} & =\left(a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \oplus\left(a_{3} b_{3}+a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}} \oplus\left(a_{2} b_{2}+a_{3} b_{1}+a_{1} b_{3}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} \\
& \oplus \frac{1}{3}\left(\begin{array}{l}
2 a_{1} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
2 a_{3} b_{3}-a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1} \\
2 a_{2} b_{2}-a_{3} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{S}} \oplus \frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{3} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{A}} \tag{A.4}
\end{align*}
$$

and in the real basis it is [21]

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{3} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} & =\left(a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{2}+a_{3} b_{3}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \oplus\left(a_{1} b_{1}+\omega^{2} a_{2} b_{2}+\omega a_{3} b_{3}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime}} \oplus\left(a_{1} b_{1}+\omega a_{2} b_{2}+\omega^{2} a_{3} b_{3}\right)_{\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{2} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{3} b_{1}+a_{1} b_{3} \\
a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{S}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{3} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{3} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}_{A}} . \tag{A.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, the multiplication rules for the singlets are

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \otimes 1=1, \quad \mathbf{1}^{\prime} \otimes 1^{\prime}=\mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime}, \quad \mathbf{1}^{\prime \prime} \otimes 1^{\prime \prime}=\mathbf{1}^{\prime}, \quad 1^{\prime} \otimes 1^{\prime \prime}=1 . \tag{A.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

## A. 2 Modular forms of weight 2 for $A_{4}$

The three linearly independent weight 2 modular forms of level $3 Y_{1,2,3}^{(2)}$ form a triplet of $A_{4}$. In [21], these modular forms were expressed in terms of the Dedekind eta functions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta(\tau)=q^{1 / 24} \prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1-q^{n}\right), \quad q=e^{i 2 \pi \tau} . \tag{A.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The triplet modular forms $Y_{1,2,3}^{(2)}$ can then be expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{1}^{(2)}(\tau)=\frac{i}{2 \pi}\left[\frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}+\frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}+\frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}-27 \frac{\eta^{\prime}(3 \tau)}{\eta(3 \tau)}\right] \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y_{2}^{(2)}(\tau)=-\frac{i}{\pi}\left[\frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}+\omega^{2} \frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}+\omega \frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}\right]  \tag{A.9}\\
& Y_{3}^{(2)}(\tau)=-\frac{i}{\pi}\left[\frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau}{3}\right)}+\omega \frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+1}{3}\right)}+\omega^{2} \frac{\eta^{\prime}\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}{\eta\left(\frac{\tau+2}{3}\right)}\right] . \tag{A.10}
\end{align*}
$$

## A. 3 Vacuum alignments for bi-triplet $\Phi$ in $A_{4}$

In this Appendix we consider how to align the VEV of the bi-triplet $\Phi$. Following from [7] where such an alignment was obtained in the context of $S_{4}$, we add two driving fields, with the properties present in Table A. 2.

| Fields | $A_{4}^{l}$ | $A_{4}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\chi_{l \nu}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $\chi_{l}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |

Table A.2: Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the bi-triplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{4}$.

The superpotential responsible for the vacuum alignment that will be minimized with relation to the driving fields is

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=\Phi \Phi \chi_{l \nu}+M \Phi \chi_{l \nu}+\Phi \Phi \chi_{l} . \tag{A.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Care should be taken given that we are here dealing with $A_{4}$ groups, rather than $S_{4}$. The main differences are the presence of the anti-symmetric triplet $\mathbf{3}_{A}$ in the contraction of $\mathbf{3} \times \mathbf{3}$ (in $S_{4}$ it is a different inequivalent $\mathbf{3}^{\prime}$ ), and that $S_{4}$ has a doublet (which decomposes into the two non-trivial singlets of $A_{4}$ ).

As the alignment superpotential above features only contractions into the trivial singlet of $A_{4}$ and $\Phi \Phi$ contractions (where $\Phi$ appears twice), the equations are analogous to those in the $S_{4}$ case and in general the solutions of these equations are the same as for the $S_{4}$ case, presented in [7]. Still, the new contraction in $A_{4}$ that gives a antisymmetric triplet introduces a small difference. When considering the term $\Phi \Phi \chi_{l}$, we contract $\Phi \Phi$ into a singlet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$ and a triplet of $A_{4}^{l}$ and thus the only non-vanishing contribution is the symmetric triplet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$ that is finally combined with $\chi_{l}$ into a singlet of $A_{4}^{\nu}$. Here, no difference appears with relation to $S_{4}$. However, for the term $\Phi \Phi \chi_{\nu l}$, we are now contracting $\Phi \Phi$ into triplets of both symmetries, which means that we will have to consider separately when we contract $\Phi \Phi$ into both symmetric triplets of $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$, and antisymmetric triplets of $A_{4}^{l}$ and $A_{4}^{\nu}$. The other possibility, i.e. considering simultaneously a symmetric triplet under one symmetry and a antisymmetric triplet under the other, always vanishes.

It is simpler to solve the relations that arise from the minimisation of this superpotential working in the real basis. In fact, the multiplication of two triplets in the real basis can be simply expressed by a Levi-Civita tensor. From Eq.(A.11), we have that

$$
\begin{align*}
& (a \otimes b)_{\mathbf{3}_{S} i}=\left|\epsilon_{i j k}\right| a_{j} b_{k}  \tag{A.12}\\
& (a \otimes b)_{\mathbf{3}_{A} i}=\epsilon_{i j k} a_{j} b_{k} \tag{A.13}
\end{align*}
$$

We get the constraints:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k=1,2,3} \sum_{\beta, \gamma=1,2,3}\left(g_{S}\left|\epsilon_{i j k}\right|\left|\epsilon_{\alpha \beta \gamma}\right|+g_{A} \epsilon_{i j k} \epsilon_{\alpha \beta \gamma}\right)(\tilde{\Phi})_{j \beta}(\tilde{\Phi})_{k \gamma}+M(\tilde{\Phi})_{i \alpha}=0 \text { for } i=1,2,3, \alpha=1,2,3 \tag{A.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k=1,2,3} \sum_{\alpha=1,2,3}\left|\epsilon_{i j k}\right|(\tilde{\Phi})_{j \alpha}(\tilde{\Phi})_{k \alpha}=0 \text { for } i=1,2,3 \tag{A.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g_{A}$ and $g_{S}$ are constants that account for the combination of both indices of $\Phi \Phi$ symmetrically and anti-symmetrically. The solutions for general values of $g_{S}$ and $g_{A}$, with $g_{A} \neq g_{S}$ can be written as $3 \times 3$ unitary matrices.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \langle\tilde{\Phi}\rangle=v_{\Phi}\left\{\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1
\end{array}\right),\right. \\
& \left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & -1 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & -1 \\
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -1 & 0
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1 \\
-1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
-1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & -1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & -1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left(\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & -1 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & -1 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left.\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & -1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & -1 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -1 \\
0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

where $v_{\Phi}$ is a constant that depends on $g_{A}, g_{S}$ and $M$. These are precisely the representations of the elements of $S_{4}$ in the real basis, $\tilde{\rho}_{3}(\gamma), \gamma \in S_{4}$, half of which correspond also to representations of $A_{4}$ in the real basis. Returning to the complex basis used in the main text, we find simply that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} \rho_{\mathbf{3}}(\gamma) P_{23}, \gamma \in S_{4} \tag{A.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, in the specific case that $g_{A}=g_{S}$, only half of these 24 solutions are valid solutions, more precisely the first twelve solutions in Eq.(A.16), which are the $A_{4}$ elements in the real basis, and thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{A}=g_{S}:\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} \rho_{\mathbf{3}}(\gamma) P_{23}, \gamma \in A_{4} . \tag{A.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the main text we have used as VEV the identity in the real basis, $\delta_{i \alpha}$, first solution in Eq.(A.16), which in the complex basis becomes $\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} P_{23}$. This specific VEV leads to the recovering of the usual multiplication of two triplets to give a singlet. In the following we will show that it is still possible to construct an invariant term under the single $A_{4}$ symmetry that remains after the symmetry breaking of the two independent symmetries when choosing one of the other eleven VEV's.

We choose then one of the twelve VEV's $\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi} \rho_{\mathbf{3}}\left(\gamma_{1}\right) P_{23}, \gamma_{1} \in A_{4}$. We consider that the fields transform under the single $A_{4}$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
& E^{c} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{l}+d_{2}\right)^{-2 k_{E_{c}^{c}}^{l}}\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{-2 k_{E}^{\nu} c} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right) E^{c}  \tag{A.18}\\
& L \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{-2 k_{L}^{L}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right) L  \tag{A.19}\\
& \nu^{c} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{-2 k_{\nu}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{1}^{-1} \gamma_{2} \gamma_{1}\right) \nu^{c}  \tag{A.20}\\
& Y^{l} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{l}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{k_{l}^{l}}^{l}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right) Y^{l}  \tag{A.21}\\
& Y_{1}^{\nu} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{Y_{1}^{\prime}}^{\nu}} Y_{1}^{\nu}  \tag{A.22}\\
& Y_{3}^{\nu} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{\gamma_{3}}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{1}^{-1} \gamma_{2} \gamma_{1}\right) Y_{3}^{\nu}  \tag{A.23}\\
& M_{1} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{M_{1}}^{\nu}} M_{1}  \tag{A.24}\\
& M_{1^{\prime}} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{M_{1^{\prime}}}^{\nu} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right) M_{1^{\prime}}}  \tag{A.25}\\
& M_{1^{\prime \prime}} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{M_{1} \prime \prime}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right) M_{1^{\prime \prime}}  \tag{A.26}\\
& M_{\mathbf{3}} \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{M_{3}}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{1}^{-1} \gamma_{2} \gamma_{1}\right) M_{3} \tag{A.27}
\end{align*}
$$

where $E^{c}$ stands for $e^{c}, \nu^{c}$ and $\tau^{c}$. For the singlets, it was taken into account that $\rho\left(\gamma_{1}^{-1} \gamma_{2} \gamma_{1}\right)=\rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right)$. We require here that the triplets $\nu^{c}, Y_{3}^{\nu}$ and $M_{3}$, instead of transforming under $\gamma_{2} \in A_{4}$, transform under the conjugate element of $\gamma_{2}$, which belongs to $A_{4}$ if $\gamma_{1}$ also belongs to $A_{4}$. Obviously for the other twelve solutions that belong to $S_{4}$ but not to $A_{4}$ this is not verified.

The transformation rules for $\nu^{c}, Y_{3}^{\nu}$ and $M_{3}$ are equivalent to the following ones:

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) \nu^{c}\right] } & \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{-2 k_{\nu}^{c}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right)\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) \nu^{c}\right]  \tag{A.28}\\
{\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\right] } & \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\prime}}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right)\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) Y_{\mathbf{3}}^{\nu}\right]  \tag{A.29}\\
{\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) M_{\mathbf{3}}\right] } & \rightarrow\left(c_{2} \tau_{\nu}+d_{2}\right)^{2 k_{M_{3}}^{\nu}} \rho\left(\gamma_{2}\right)\left[\rho\left(\gamma_{1}\right) M_{\mathbf{3}}\right] \tag{A.30}
\end{align*}
$$

which implies that, with a suitable redefinition of $\nu^{c}, Y_{3}^{\nu}$ and $M_{3}$, we recover the single $A_{4}$ subgroup under which all the terms after $\Phi$ gains a VEV are invariant. In conclusion, we found that, in general, half of the values the VEV of $\Phi$ can have (12 in 24) lead to the same results discussed in the main text and nothing new is left to be said about these other 11 solutions, and interestingly these twelve equivalent solutions are the only possible values for the VEV when $g_{A}=g_{S}$.

Here we dealt with the specific case of the seesaw mechanism used for the two models in Section 3.4. For the Weinberg operator in Section 3.3 the same conclusions are valid: there is no difference in using the other eleven VEV's for $\Phi$. In fact, the reasoning is even simpler in this case since fewer fields are used.

## Appendix B

## Modular $A_{5}$ Symmetry Group

## B. $1 \quad A_{5}$ multiplication rules

The group $A_{5}$ is the group of even permutations of five objects and is the symmetry group of the icosahedron and its dual solid the dodecahedron. It has 60 elements and two generators, S and T :

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{2}=(S T)^{3}=T^{5}=1 \tag{B.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$A_{5}$ has five conjugacy classes:

$$
\begin{align*}
& C_{1}=\{e\}  \tag{B.2}\\
& \begin{aligned}
C_{2}= & \left\{T^{3} S T^{2} S T, S T^{2} S T^{3}, S T^{2} S T^{2} S T, S T^{3} S T, T^{3} S T^{3}, T^{2} S T^{2}, T S, T S T S, S T^{3} S T S, T^{2} S T^{2} S T,\right. \\
& \left.\quad S T S T^{3}, T^{3} S T, S T^{3} S T^{2}, T^{3} S T^{2} S, T^{3} S T S, T S T^{3}, S T, S T S T, T S T^{3} S T, S T^{2} S T^{2} S\right\}
\end{aligned} \\
& \begin{aligned}
C_{3}= & \left\{S T S T^{2}, T^{2} S T^{3} S T S, S T^{3} S T^{2} S, T^{2} S T^{3}, S, S T^{3} S T^{2} S T, S T^{2} S T^{3} S T, T^{2} S T^{3} S T^{2},\right. \\
& \left.S T S T^{3} S T^{2}, T S T^{2} S, S T^{2} S T^{3} S T^{2}, S T^{2} S T, T^{3} S T^{2}, T^{2} S T S, T S T^{3} S T^{2} S\right\} \\
C_{4}= & \left\{T, T^{4}, T S T, S T S, S T S T^{2} S, T S T^{2}, T^{3} S, S T^{2}, T^{2} S, S T^{3}, S T^{2} S T S, T^{2} S T\right\} \\
C_{5}= & \left\{T^{2}, T^{3}, S T^{2} S, T S T^{2} S T, S T S T^{3} S T^{2} S, T S T^{3} S T^{2}, S T S T^{3} S T,\right. \\
& \left.S T^{2} S T^{2}, T^{2} S T^{2} S, T S T^{3} S T S, T^{2} S T^{3} S T, S T^{2} S T^{3} S T S\right\}
\end{aligned} \tag{B.3}
\end{align*}
$$

This group has five irreducible representations: an invariant singlet 1 , two triplets 3 and $3^{\prime}$, a quadruplet 4 and a quintuplet 5. The representations for the generators are in Table B.1.

The product of two irreps decomposes in the following way:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbf{3} \otimes \mathbf{3}=\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.7}\\
& \mathbf{3} \otimes \mathbf{3}^{\prime}=\mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.8}\\
& \mathbf{3} \otimes \mathbf{4}=\mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.9}\\
& \mathbf{3} \otimes \mathbf{5}=\mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5} \tag{B.10}
\end{align*}
$$

|  |  | $S$ | $T$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 |  | 1 | 1 |
| 3 |  | $\frac{1}{\sqrt{5}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & -\sqrt{2} & -\sqrt{2} \\ -\sqrt{2} & -\phi & 1 / \phi \\ -\sqrt{2} & 1 / \phi & -\phi\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \zeta & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \zeta^{4}\end{array}\right)$ |
| $3^{\prime}$ |  | $\frac{1}{\sqrt{5}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}-1 & \sqrt{2} & \sqrt{2} \\ \sqrt{2} & -1 / \phi & \phi \\ \sqrt{2} & \phi & -1 / \phi\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \zeta^{2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \zeta^{3}\end{array}\right)$ |
| 4 |  | $\frac{1}{\sqrt{5}}\left(\begin{array}{cccc}1 & 1 / \phi & \phi & -1 \\ 1 / \phi & -1 & 1 & \phi \\ \phi & 1 & -1 & 1 / \phi \\ -1 & \phi & 1 / \phi & 1\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{cccc}\zeta & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \zeta^{2} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \zeta^{3} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \zeta^{4}\end{array}\right)$ |
| 5 | $\frac{1}{\sqrt{5}}$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}-1 & \sqrt{6} & \sqrt{6} & \sqrt{6} & \sqrt{6} \\ \sqrt{6} & 1 / \phi^{2} & -2 \phi & 2 / \phi & \phi^{2} \\ \sqrt{6} & -2 \phi & \phi^{2} & 1 / \phi^{2} & 2 / \phi \\ \sqrt{6} & 2 / \phi & 1 / \phi^{2} & \phi^{2} & 2 \phi \\ \sqrt{6} & \phi^{2} & 2 / \phi & -2 \phi & 1 / \phi^{2}\end{array}\right)$ | $\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \zeta & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \zeta^{2} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \zeta^{3} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \zeta^{4}\end{array}\right)$ |

Table B.1: Representation for the two generators of $A_{5}$, where $\phi=\frac{1+\sqrt{5}}{2}$ and $\zeta=e^{2 \pi i / 5}$.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \otimes \mathbf{3}^{\prime}=\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.11}\\
& \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \otimes \mathbf{4}=\mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.12}\\
& \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \otimes \mathbf{5}=\mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.13}\\
& \mathbf{4} \otimes \mathbf{4}=\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}  \tag{B.14}\\
& \mathbf{4} \otimes \mathbf{5}=\mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4} \oplus \mathbf{5}_{1} \oplus \mathbf{5}_{2}  \tag{B.15}\\
& \mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5}=\mathbf{1} \oplus \mathbf{3} \oplus \mathbf{3}^{\prime} \oplus \mathbf{4}_{1} \oplus \mathbf{4}_{2} \oplus \mathbf{5}_{1} \oplus \mathbf{5}_{2} \tag{B.16}
\end{align*}
$$

The factors considered for the representation in Table B. 1 lead to the following decomposition, with the Clebsch-Gordan coefficients in [52]:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}}=\left(a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{3} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 a_{1} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{3} \\
-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}  \tag{B.17}\\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}}=\left(a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{2}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{3} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}}^{\oplus}\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 a_{1} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{3} \\
-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1} \\
-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \tag{B.18}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.\left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{c}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{2} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-a_{3} b_{3} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-a_{2} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{4}^{\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{1}}{ }_{a_{2} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{2}}^{a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3}} \begin{array}{c} 
\\
a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2} \\
a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-a_{2} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{4}+a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{3^{\prime}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{1} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{2} \\
-a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{1} b_{3}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4} \\
-a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{1} \\
2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{1}+2 a_{3} b_{2} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1}+3 a_{3} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{4}-3 a_{2} b_{2} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}-2 a_{2} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{4}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{4}-a_{3} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+a_{3} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{1} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4} \\
-a_{1} b_{3}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1} \\
-a_{1} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{1}-3 a_{2} b_{4}-a_{3} b_{3} \\
2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}+2 a_{3} b_{4} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-2 a_{2} b_{1} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+3 a_{3} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{5} \tag{B.21}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{c}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4} \\
b_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} & =\left(\begin{array}{c}
-2 a_{1} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{5}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{5}+a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{5}+a_{3} b_{2} \\
a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4} \\
a_{1} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}^{\prime}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{3} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}+2 a_{2} b_{2}-3 a_{3} b_{4} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}-2 a_{2} b_{5}+3 a_{2} b_{3} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}+\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{4}}^{\oplus}\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{2} \\
-a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3} \\
-2 a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2} \\
2 a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{5} \\
a_{1} b_{5}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}
\end{array}\right) \tag{B.22}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{3^{\prime}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4} \\
b_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{4}+a_{3} b_{3} \\
a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4} \\
a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{3} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
-2 a_{1} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{4}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{3}+a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{5} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{4}+a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{3^{\prime}} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-2 a_{3} b_{4}+3 a_{2} b_{5} \\
2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{5} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{1}-a_{2} b_{2} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}+2 a_{2} b_{3}-3 a_{3} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{3} \\
2 a_{1} b_{2}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4} \\
-a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{5} \\
a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2} \\
-2 a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}  \tag{B.23}\\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3} \\
a_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{4}=\left(a_{1} b_{4}+a_{2} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{2}+a_{4} b_{1}\right)_{1} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2}+a_{4} b_{1}-a_{1} b_{4} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{2} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{2}+a_{1} b_{4}-a_{4} b_{1} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{3} \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{3} b_{3}+a_{2} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{2} \\
a_{1} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{3} \\
a_{4} b_{4}+a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{2} b_{2}+a_{1} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{2} \\
2 \sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{2} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{3} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1} \\
2 \sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{5}  \tag{B.24}\\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3} \\
a_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{4}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4} \\
b_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}-2 \sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{2}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4} \\
3 a_{3} b_{4}+2 a_{2} b_{5}-a_{4} b_{3}-\sqrt{6} a_{1} b_{1} \\
-3 a_{2} b_{3}-2 a_{3} b_{2}+a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{3}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 \sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-2 \sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3}+\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{2} \\
3 a_{1} b_{2}+2 a_{4} b_{4}-a_{3} b_{5}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{1} \\
-3 a_{4} b_{5}-2 a_{1} b_{3}+a_{2} b_{2}+\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{3^{\prime}} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{5}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4}-2 \sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{3} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1}+2 \sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{5}+\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{4} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}+2 \sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{5} \\
-2 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{2}+\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{4} \oplus
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{3}+\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{2} \\
-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{4}-\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{2}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{5} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{2}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{5} \\
-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{4}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{5_{1}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 a_{1} b_{5}+4 a_{2} b_{4}+4 a_{3} b_{3}+2 a_{4} b_{2} \\
4 a_{1} b_{1}+2 \sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{5} \\
-\sqrt{6} a_{1} b_{2}+2 a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{5}+2 \sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{4} \\
2 \sqrt{6} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{2}+2 a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{5} \\
2 \sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{2}+4 a_{4} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}  \tag{B.25}\\
& \oplus \\
& \left(\begin{array}{l}
a_{1} \\
a_{2} \\
a_{3} \\
a_{4} \\
a_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}} \otimes\left(\begin{array}{l}
b_{1} \\
b_{2} \\
b_{3} \\
b_{4} \\
b_{5}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}}=\left(a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{5}+a_{5} b_{2}+a_{3} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{3}\right)_{\mathbf{1}} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{2} b_{5}-a_{5} b_{2}+2 a_{3} b_{4}-2 a_{4} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{2}+\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{5} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{3} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{4} b_{3}-a_{3} b_{4}+2 a_{2} b_{5}-2 a_{5} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{3}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{5} b_{4} \\
\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{3}-\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{3^{\prime}} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
4 \sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{4}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{3} \\
4 \sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{2}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{4} \\
4 \sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{5}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{3} \\
4 \sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{3}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}+3 \sqrt{2} a_{5} b_{1}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{4}-\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{4_{1}} \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{l}
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{2}-\sqrt{2} a_{2} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{3} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{3}+\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{5}-\sqrt{3} a_{5} b_{4} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{4} b_{1}-\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{4}+\sqrt{3} a_{3} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{2} a_{1} b_{5}-\sqrt{2} a_{5} b_{1}+\sqrt{3} a_{4} b_{2}-\sqrt{3} a_{2} b_{4}
\end{array}\right)_{4_{2}} \oplus \\
& \oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 a_{1} b_{1}+a_{2} b_{5}+a_{5} b_{2}-2 a_{3} b_{4}-2 a_{4} b_{3} \\
a_{1} b_{2}+a_{2} b_{1}+\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{5}+\sqrt{6} a_{5} b_{3} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{2}-2 a_{1} b_{3}-2 a_{3} b_{1} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{5} b_{5}-2 a_{1} b_{4}-2 a_{4} b_{1} \\
a_{1} b_{5}+a_{5} b_{1}+\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{4}+\sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{2}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}_{1}} \oplus
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\oplus\left(\begin{array}{c}
2 a_{1} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{3}-2 a_{2} b_{5}-2 a_{5} b_{2}  \tag{B.26}\\
\sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{4}-2 a_{1} b_{2}-2 a_{2} b_{1} \\
a_{1} b_{3}+a_{3} b_{1}+\sqrt{6} a_{4} b_{5}+\sqrt{6} a_{5} b_{4} \\
a_{1} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{1}+\sqrt{6} a_{2} b_{3}+\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{2} \\
\sqrt{6} a_{3} b_{3}-2 a_{1} b_{5}-2 a_{5} b_{1}
\end{array}\right)_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}
$$

## B. 2 Modular forms of weight 2 for $A_{5}$

The linear space of modular forms of level $N=5$ and weight 2 has dimension 11. These modular functions are arranged into two triplets 3 and $3^{\prime}$ and a quintuplet 5 of $\Gamma_{5}$. Modular forms of higher weight can be constructed from polynomials of these eleven modular functions.

The weight 2 modular functions can be expressed as linear combinations of logarithmic derivatives of some functions $\alpha_{i, j}(\tau)$, closed under the action of $A_{5}$, and these can be in terms of the theta function $\theta_{3}(z(\tau), t(\tau)):$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{3}(z, t)=\sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} q^{k^{2}} e^{2 \pi i k z}=1+2 \sum_{k \in \mathbb{N}} q^{k^{2}} \cos (2 \pi k z), q=e^{\pi i t} \tag{B.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

The seed functions $\alpha_{i, j}(\tau)$ are explicitly:

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\alpha_{1,-1}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{2}, 5 \tau\right), & \alpha_{2,-1}(\tau) & \equiv e^{2 \pi i \tau / 5} \theta_{3}\left(\frac{3 \tau+1}{2}, 5 \tau\right), \\
\alpha_{1,0}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+9}{10}, \frac{\tau}{5}\right), & \alpha_{2,0}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+7}{10}, \frac{\tau}{5}\right) \\
\alpha_{1,1}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau}{10}, \frac{\tau+1}{5}\right), & \alpha_{2,1}(\tau) \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+8}{10}, \frac{\tau+1}{5}\right) \\
\alpha_{1,2}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{10}, \frac{\tau+2}{5}\right), & \alpha_{2,2}(\tau) \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+9}{10}, \frac{\tau+2}{5}\right)  \tag{B.28}\\
\alpha_{1,3}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+2}{10}, \frac{\tau+3}{5}\right), & & \alpha_{2,3}(\tau) \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau}{10}, \frac{\tau+3}{5}\right) \\
\alpha_{1,4}(\tau) & \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+3}{10}, \frac{\tau+4}{5}\right), & & \alpha_{2,4}(\tau) \equiv \theta_{3}\left(\frac{\tau+1}{10}, \frac{\tau+4}{5}\right)
\end{array}
$$

The linear combination of the logarithmic derivatives of these functions,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y\left(c_{1,-1}, \ldots, c_{1,4} ; c_{2,-1}, \ldots, c_{2,4} \mid \tau\right) \equiv \sum_{i, j} c_{i, j} \frac{\mathrm{~d}}{\mathrm{~d} \tau} \log \alpha_{i, j}(\tau), \quad \text { with } \sum_{i, j} c_{i, j}=0 \tag{B.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

span the linear space of the modular forms of level $N=5$ and weight 2 . These are then divided into the multiplets:

$$
Y_{\mathbf{5}}(\tau)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{1}(\tau)  \tag{B.30}\\
Y_{2}(\tau) \\
Y_{3}(\tau) \\
Y_{4}(\tau) \\
Y_{5}(\tau)
\end{array}\right) \equiv\left(\begin{array}{c}
-\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}} Y(-5,1,1,1,1,1 ;-5,1,1,1,1,1 \mid \tau) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{2}, \zeta ; 0,1, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{2}, \zeta \mid \tau\right) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{3}, \zeta, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{2} ; 0,1, \zeta^{3}, \zeta, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{2} \mid \tau\right) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{4}, \zeta, \zeta^{3} ; 0,1, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{4}, \zeta, \zeta^{3} \mid \tau\right) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{4} ; 0,1, \zeta, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{4} \mid \tau\right)
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
Y_{\mathbf{3}}(\tau)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{6}(\tau) \\
Y_{7}(\tau) \\
Y_{8}(\tau)
\end{array}\right) \equiv\left(\begin{array}{c}
\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y(-\sqrt{5},-1,-1,-1,-1,-1 ; \sqrt{5}, 1,1,1,1,1 \mid \tau) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{2}, \zeta ; 0,-1,-\zeta^{4},-\zeta^{3},-\zeta^{2},-\zeta \mid \tau\right) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{3}, \zeta^{4} ; 0,-1,-\zeta,-\zeta^{2},-\zeta^{3},-\zeta^{4} \mid \tau\right)
\end{array}\right),  \tag{B.31}\\
Y_{3^{\prime}}(\tau)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
Y_{9}(\tau) \\
Y_{10}(\tau) \\
Y_{11}(\tau)
\end{array}\right) \equiv\left(\begin{array}{c}
\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} Y(\sqrt{5},-1,-1,-1,-1,-1 ;-\sqrt{5}, 1,1,1,1,1 \mid \tau) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{3}, \zeta, \zeta^{4}, \zeta^{2} ; 0,-1,-\zeta^{3},-\zeta,-\zeta^{4},-\zeta^{2} \mid \tau\right) \\
Y\left(0,1, \zeta^{2}, \zeta^{4}, \zeta, \zeta^{3} ; 0,-1,-\zeta^{2},-\zeta^{4},-\zeta,-\zeta^{3} \mid \tau\right)
\end{array}\right), \tag{B.32}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\zeta=e^{2 \pi i / 5}$.

## B. 3 Vacuum alignments for bi-quintuplet $\Phi$ in $A_{5}$

In this Appendix we consider how to align the VEV of the bi-quintuplet $\Phi$. Following from [7] and A. 3 where an alignment was obtained in the context of $S_{4}$ and $A_{4}$, we add two driving fields, with the properties present in Table B.2.

| Fields | $A_{5}^{l}$ | $A_{5}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\chi_{l \nu}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $\chi_{l}$ | $\mathbf{5}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 0 | 0 |

Table B.2: Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the biquintuplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{5}$.

The superpotential responsible for the vacuum alignment that will be minimised with relation to the driving fields is

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=\Phi \Phi \chi_{l \nu}+M \Phi \chi_{l \nu}+\Phi \Phi \chi_{l} \tag{B.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

With this field content, we are only interested in contractions of quintuplets to give quintuplets or singlets. Minimising this superpotential in order to the driving fields leads us to the constraints:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{j, k=1, \ldots, 5} \sum_{\beta, \gamma=1, \ldots, 5}\left(P_{i j k}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}}+c P_{i j k}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}}\right)\left(P_{\alpha \beta \gamma}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}}+c P_{\alpha \beta \gamma}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}}\right)(\Phi)_{j \beta}(\Phi)_{k \gamma}+M(\Phi)_{i \alpha}=0,  \tag{B.34}\\
& \quad \text { for } i=1, \ldots, 5, \alpha=1, \ldots, 5 \\
& \sum_{j, k=1, \ldots, 5} \sum_{\alpha, \beta=1, \ldots, 5} P_{\alpha \beta}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{1}}\left(P_{i j k}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{5_{1}}}+c P_{i j k}^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{2}}}\right)(\Phi)_{j \alpha}(\Phi)_{k \beta}=0 \text { for } i=1, \ldots, 5 . \tag{B.35}
\end{align*}
$$

where $5 \times 5$ matrices that describe the multiplication rules in Section B. 1 were introduced:

$$
P^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{1}}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0  \tag{B.36}\\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& P^{(\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5})_{\mathbf{5}_{1}}}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -2 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & -2 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left.\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6}
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right)  \tag{B.37}\\
& P^{\mathbf{5} \otimes \mathbf{5} \mathbf{5}_{\mathbf{2}}}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -2 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -2 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & -2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0
\end{array}\right), \\
& \left.\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -2 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sqrt{6} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right) \tag{B.38}
\end{align*}
$$

It can be easily verified that

$$
\langle\Phi\rangle=v_{\Phi}\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0  \tag{B.39}\\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

which is the VEV used in the main text for $\Phi$, obeys the constraints Eq.(B.35). This is one of the elements of the $A_{5}$ in the five dimensional representation. In fact, all the representations of the elements of $A_{5}$ are solutions of these constraints. Note that we only verified that these solve the equations, we did not solve fully these equations. This is the matter of a still ongoing study.

## B. 4 Vacuum alignments for bi-triplet $\Phi$ in $A_{5}$

In this Appendix we consider how to align the VEV of the bi-triplet $\Phi$ for the model using the seesaw mechanism to generate the neutrino masses. In this symmetry group, conversely to what happened in $A_{4}$, there is no symmetry contraction of two triplets to another triplet, the contraction of two triplets to a
triplet is by definition antisymmetric. This reasoning is valid either for 3 and $3^{\prime}$, since their multiplication rules only differ in the quintuplet decomposition. We conclude then that in $A_{4}$ we had both triplets (as we saw in Section A.3), in $S_{4}$ only the symmetric contribution appeared and for $A_{5}$ only the antisymmetric one appears.

This means that adding a driving field like $\chi_{l}$ in Section A. 3 does not provide additional constraints since $\Phi$ will not couple to $\chi_{l}$ in a term like $\Phi \Phi \chi_{l}$. Thus, we will try to add only one driving field, with the properties present in Table B.3. We state again that is not important if the $L, E^{c}$ and $\nu^{c}$ are triplets 3 or $3^{\prime}$ and thus if $\Phi$ is a bi-triplet $\mathbf{3}$ or $3^{\prime}$ given that the contraction rules $3 \times 3 \rightarrow 3$ and $3^{\prime} \times 3^{\prime} \rightarrow 3^{\prime}$ are the same, and the same happens for $3 \times 3 \rightarrow 1$ and $3^{\prime} \times 3^{\prime} \rightarrow 1$.

| Fields | $A_{5}^{l}$ | $A_{5}^{\nu}$ | $2 k_{l}$ | $2 k_{\nu}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\chi_{l \nu}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(1)}$ | $\mathbf{3}^{(1)}$ | 0 | 0 |

Table B.3: Transformation properties of the fields responsible for the vacuum alignment of the bi-triplet $\Phi$ for the models with two modular $A_{5}$.

The superpotential responsible for the vacuum alignment that will be minimized with relation to the driving field is

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=\Phi \Phi \chi_{l \nu}+M \Phi \chi_{l \nu} \tag{B.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Eq.(B.40) and working in the complex basis, in which $T$ is diagonal, we are then able to derive the constraints:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j, k=1,2,3} \sum_{\beta, \gamma=1,2,3} \epsilon_{i j k} \epsilon_{\alpha \beta \gamma}(\Phi)_{j \beta}(\Phi)_{k \gamma}+M(\Phi)_{i \alpha}=0 \text { for } i=1,2,3, \alpha=1,2,3 . \tag{B.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

This system of equations is not fully determined but substituting we conclude that $P_{23}$, the vacuum used in the main text for $\langle\Phi\rangle$ is indeed one possible solution. This specific VEV leads to the recovering of the usual multiplication of two triplets to give a singlet. As for the alignment in Section B.3, and in this case even more so, a more complete discussion of this alignment will be considered in the future and is beyond the scope of this thesis.

